This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

+ *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.

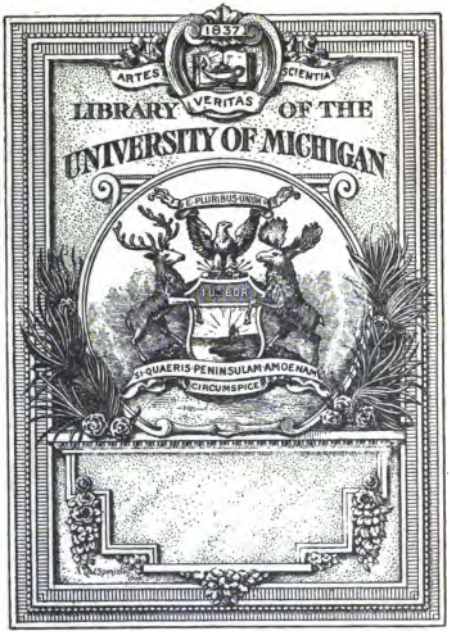
+ *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.

+ *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.

+ *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at `http://books.google.com/`


1837
ARTES
VERITAS
SCIENTIA
LIBRARY OF THE
UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
E PLURIBUS UNUM
SI QUAERIS PENINSULAM AMOENAM
CIRCUMSPICE

S2S
J734.c.
1783

CHRYSAL;

OR,

39109

THE ADVENTURES

OF

A GUINEA.

WHEREIN ARE EXHIBITED

VIEWS OF SEVERAL STRIKING SCENES,

WITH

CURIOUS AND INTERESTING ANECDOTES

OF THE

MOST NOTED PERSONS IN EVERY RANK OF LIFE,

WHOSE HANDS IT PASSED THROUGH,

IN AMERICA, ENGLAND, HOLLAND, GERMANY, AND PORTUGAL.

BY AN ADEPT.

Chas. Johnston

—— Hold the Mirrour up to Nature,
To show Vice its own Image, Virtue its own Likeneſs,
And the very Age and Body of the Times
His Form and Preſſure. SHAKSPEARE.

Qui capit, ille facit.

A NEW EDITION.

VOL. III.

LONDON:

PRINTED FOR J. F. AND C. RIVINGTON; G. ROBINSON, T. CADELL; T. EVANS; AND R. BALDWIN.

M DCC LXXXIII.

ADVERTISEMENT.

THE circumſtances in which *The Adventures of a Guinea* fell into the hands of the Editor, as explained in the General Preface, account for this, and the former additions to that work.

The uncommon favour with which the firſt edition, imperfect as it was, was received, encouraged him to ſpare no pains for the recovery of the reſt of the manuſcript: though his ſucceſs, however, in this attempt exceeded his expectations, fear of the prejudice, in general too juſtly, entertained againſt *Continuations*, prevented his publiſhing, in the Second Edition, any more of what he had recovered, than could be added without enhancing the price. But as the ſale of ſo many numerous impreſſions, ſince that edition, has entirely removed every ſhadow of ſuch fear, he thinks it would be injuſtice to the publick to with-hold the reſt from them any longer.

ADVERTISEMENT.

As to the objection made to *Continuations*, that they are written after the firſt deſign is completed, and when the imagination is exhauſted, it can by no means affect the following ſheets, which are really *a Reſtitution of the Original*, not an addition of any thing new; as will plainly appear to the judicious reader, who will find the ſame ſcope of imagination, the ſame ſpirited freedom, and depth of remark in every period of theſe volumes, which ſo eminently diſtinguiſhed the former; and trace the genuine connexion through the whole.

For one great diſadvantage, which theſe volumes lie under, candour will make the juſt allowance, when the occaſion of it is conſidered.

This is the printing of theſe parts, thus detached, and by themſelves, with only references to the places where they follow in the context of the former volumes; by which means they loſe the advantage of the general fable, or, as I may ſay, *machine*, which ſo happily introduces and ſupports the whole, and of which no more could be recovered; all but what was at firſt publiſhed

ed being cancelled by the orthodoxy of the pretended clergyman, into whoſe hands the manuſcript unfortunately fell, who ſpared no more than was indiſpenſably neceſſary to open the deſign *.

Had the Editor attended ſolely to his own intereſt, it would have ſuggeſted to him to have publiſhed this, as he did the former addition, inſerted regularly according to the connexion; as the eſtabliſhed reputation of the work would enſure the ſale of the whole, even to thoſe who had before purchaſed the former volumes. But this was an artifice he was incapable of uſing; and he choſe to publiſh theſe volumes, in this manner, rather than incur the leaſt ſuſpicion of ſo mercenary a deſign. He hopes, therefore, that a diſadvantage occaſioned by ſuch a delicate diſintereſtedneſs will not be looked upon as a defect; and that the whole will be viewed together, before any part is accuſed of abruptneſs, or want of uniformity to the general deſign.

The abſurdity and injuſtice of levelling the general reproof of vice againſt particu-

* *See the General Preface.*

lar perſons, and tracing to real characters a work of mere imagination, are too glaring to require proof. *Mr. Addiſon*, in the inſtance he has given, in one of his *Spectators*, of *the whole Duty of Man*, has ſhown that the beſt book that ever was written (humanely ſpeaking) is liable to be conſtrued into a ſcandalous libel, by ſuch a *perverſion*.

The Editor of this work has the ſatisfaction to ſee, that whatever injurious attempts of that kind were at firſt made againſt it, they have not been able to prejudice it in the opinion of the publick, as appears from the great and continued demand for it, for ſo many years. Defamation may pleaſe the malignancy of man for a day; but it muſt be merit that can ſtand the teſt of time. Such inſinuations are long ſince forgot, becauſe unſupported by truth; as will all of the ſame nature, which may be made againſt the volumes now offered to the publick, while the merit of them ſhall remain for the entertainment and inſtruction of ages.

CONTENTS of VOL. III.

BOOK THE FIRST.

CHAP. I.

INTRODUCTION. CHRYSAL *enters into a new ſervice. His maſter finds an ingenious excuſe for returning home; but is unexpectedly ſtopped ſhort by the way. In the common courſe of buſineſs,* CHRYSAL *changes his ſervice: Character of his new maſter.* Page 1

CHAP. II.

Motives of the enterpriſe in which CHRYSAL*'s maſter was engaged. In a private conference between him and his agent, ſome curious ſecrets, in a buſineſs not generally underſtood, are laid open, and a ſeeming contradiction naturally reconciled.* 8

CHAP. III.

The behaviour of CHRYSAL*'s maſter on hearing an intereſting piece of news, with his conciſe method of conducting an enterpriſe.* CHRYSAL *changes his ſervice for that of a perſon of a very different character. An eloquent ſpeech produces the uſual effects of eloquence.* 13

CHAP. IV.

The General profeſſes an uncommon motive for military ardour. An officer deſires to ſpeak with him, the mention of whoſe name opens ſome ſecrets in the ſervice. Account of the officer. An extraordinary inſtance of ignorance of the world. He ſignalizes himſelf at the expenſe of his ſuperiours, who reward him accordingly. The beſt qualifications for riſing in the army, with reaſons why things were otherwiſe under another commander. Page 18

CHAP. V.

CHRYSAL's *maſter makes ſome cloſe remarks on certain matters. The method which the General took to parry the officer.* CHRYSAL's *maſter makes up the affair. The General gives the officer an opportunity of diſtinguiſhing himſelf, which he does in a ſignal manner.* 23

CHAP. VI.

CHRYSAL *accounts curiouſly for ſome intereſting points of policy. He ſupports his reaſon for not entering into the particulars of the ſiege, by ſome remarks on war, more juſt perhaps than popular; and aſſigns a motive for courage, not likely to be meant by thoſe who give it.* 30

CHAP. VII.

One of the Captains under CHRYSAL's *maſter behaves in an extraordinary manner, and vindicates himſelf*

himſelf as extraordinarily. His crime is overlooked for prudential reaſons, which he miſtakes, and demands a tryal. He meets his deſerts. Page 34

CHAP. VIII.

CHRYSAL *accounts for the peculiar animoſities which ſome nations ſhow in war. A noble* SPANIARD *is taken priſoner in a ſally. He makes a propoſal to the General, which is accepted, and opens a proſpect of peace. A brutal outrage diſappoints his deſign, and embroils matters more than ever.* 39

CHAP. IX.

CHRYSAL*'s attention is agreeably diverted by the appearance of a young* SPANIARD, *who throws himſelf at the feet of his maſter, to prefer an extraordinary requeſt. The Hiſtory of* DON ALPHONSO GUZMAN, *the young* SPANIARD. 44

CHAP. X.

Continued. OLIVIA*'s father is taken up by the Inquiſition, and herſelf put into a convent; on an* ENGLISH *battery's firing upon which* DON ALPHONSO *comes in deſpair to* CHRYSAL*'s maſter, to make a very odd requeſt, which he grants at length, and alſo promiſes him his aſſiſtance to obtain his miſtreſs.* 52

CHAP. XI.

The fortunate effect of CHRYSAL*'s maſter's ſparing the convent. The mutual advantages to victors and vanquiſhed of articles of capitulation.* CHRYSAL*'s*

CHRYSAL's *maſter performs his promiſe to* ALPHONSO, *into whoſe ſervice* CHRYSAL *enters.* ALPHONSO *recovers his miſtreſs, whoſe father is ſet at liberty by a piece of* FUN *of ſome* ENGLISH *ſailors. Concluſion of the ſtory of* ALPHONSO. CHRYSAL *changes his ſervice.* Page 59

CHAP. XII.

CHRYSAL *makes ſome ſtriking remarks on a ſtate of abſolute liberty. Diſappointment of the hopes of the conquerours, with the natural conſequences.* CHRYSAL's *maſter going to take a taſte of the pleaſures of affluence, is flammed out of his treaſure by a ſutler, into whoſe ſervice* CHRYSAL *enters.* 69

CHAP. XIII.

Character of CHRYSAL's *new maſter. The right way not to ſuffer by making miſtakes. A curious converſation between* CHRYSAL's *maſter and two perſons of conſequence lays open the ſecrets of ſome intereſting affairs. He makes up a fooliſh diſpute by a ſenſible toaſt.* 73

CHAP. XIV.

Continued. The myſteries of agency; and convenience of a military government, with ſome curious notions of the genteeleſt ways of riſing in life. 79

CHAP. XV.

Affecting conſequences of carrying the foregoing ſchemes into execution; with the concluſion of the character and hiſtory of CHRYSAL's *maſter.* CHRYSAL *changes his ſervice.* 86

CHAP.

CHAP. XVI.

CHRYSAL's *maſter ſwallows a pill, and pleads an important cauſe without ſucceſs. A curious method of parrying one falſe oath by another, with the firſt oath taken by the maſter of a merchantman. He ſhows another inſtance of his ſkill in ſteering clear of perjury, but without his former ſucceſs. His notion of conſcience.* CHRYSAL *changes his ſervice.* Page 91

CHAP. XVII.

CHRYSAL *makes ſome reflexions on the policy of impoſing oaths of exculpation. The proper method of preſerving the validity of oaths, with the conſequences of their being adminiſtered indiſcriminately to all perſons, and on all occaſions. An uncommon lecture from a Captain of a man of war to his Officers repreſents ſome polite amuſements in an odd light.* 100

CHAP. XVIII.

The folly of a perſon's proſtituting his character to pleaſe his company aggravated by the dangerous miſtake of ridicule for applauſe. CHRYSAL's *maſter changes place with the Chaplain, and preaches him an intereſting ſermon, in which, among remarks more juſt than polite, he gives an uncommon reaſon for the particular deformity of vice in women.* 106

CHAP. XIX.

CHRYSAL *deſcribes true compaſſion; and ſhows the general conſequence of a man's acknowledging diſtreſs,*

diſtreſs, with the reaſons of it. CHRYSAL'*s maſter is prevailed upon by his captain to tell him the cauſe of his melancholy, which is removed by an act of uncommon generoſity.* CHRYSAL *enters into a new ſervice.* Page 111

CHAP. XX.

Hiſtory of a lieutenant of a man of war. A compariſon between the rewards of merit, in the land and ſea ſervices; with a remarkable inſtance of a great man's remembering an old friend. The conſequence of attempting to ſet up for a mender of manners, and of a man's not meeting an opportunity of making himſelf remarkable. 118

CHAP. XXI.

An uncommon method of carrying on a war; with the danger of ſpeaking the truth too plainly, at an improper time. CHRYSAL'*s maſter meets his brother. Some account of him. He repreſents certain matters in an odd light.* CHRYSAL *enters into his ſervice. Concluſion of his character.* CHRYSAL *quits his ſervice, on an uncommon occaſion, for one from which he paſſes, in the uſual courſe of buſineſs, into that of the General.* 125

BOOK

CONTENTS.

BOOK II.

CHAP. I.

CHRYSAL's *maſter makes ſome characteriſtick reflexions. He is ſurpriſed at the officer's refuſing to make up matters; and gives a particular reaſon for ſome people's riſing in the world. An extraordinary perſonage enters to him. Deſcription of him. He gives a character of the native* AMERICANS; *and offers ſome intereſting remarks on the return they make to the treatment they meet with; and on the practice of forming in the cloſet plans of operations for armies in the field. Odd reaſon why the* AMERICANS *are deſirous of gold.* CHRYSAL *changes his ſervice.* Page 133

CHAP. II.

The manner in which CHRYSAL's *maſter was received by his ſubjects. Antiquated principles on which his authority was founded. His odd opinions and conduct in ſome important matters, with the conſequences.* 145

CHAP III.

CHRYSAL *deſcribes his maſter's habitation and family. He makes an uncommon progreſs. The manner in which he found the females of his houſehold engaged. Remarks on* FINERY. *Account of their amuſements, with the manner in which they uſually ended. The method by which* CHRYSAL's *maſter kept peace in his family.* 149

CHAP.

CHAP. IV.

CHRYSAL's *master is honourably rewarded for his services. An unexpected meeting with one of his country-women introduces an uncommon remark on a common matter. The lady gives an odd instance of conjugal love; and refuses the civil offer of* CHRYSAL's *master, for a natural reason.* CHRYSAL *changes his service.* Page 156

CHAP. V.

CHRYSAL's *mistress gives some striking instances of female consistency. She is cured of her grief by a person of accomplishments as extraordinary as her own. The advantage of comparative excellence.* CHRYSAL's *mistress marries, and he changes his service for that of an old master.* 163

CHAP. VI.

CHRYSAL *arrives in* ENGLAND. *His master is saluted by a sight not very pleasing. The history of the unfortunate hero of the day opens some mysterious scenes.* THE OBVIOUS USE OF COUNCILS OF WAR. 167

CHAP. VII.

Continued. Consequence of the foregoing conduct. An extraordinary sentence attempted to be reversed in an extraordinary manner, and by as extraordinary persons. The reason of this; and why it miscarried. More mysteries. Just fate of the BUNGLERS, *who left their poor* TOOL *in the lurch; with the consequences of this affair to a certain corps.* 174

CHAP.

CHAP. VIII.

CHRYSAL *changes his ſervice. He gets a view of a court of* CIVIL JUDICATURE, *on an extraordinary occaſion. Some reflexions out of the common cant on the delays of the law. A whimſical application of an old ſtory produces the ſtrange effect of putting a counſellor out of countenance. The neceſſity of abſolute power in ſome governments; with a common deciſion, by which nothing is decided.* Page 182

CHAP IX.

CHRYSAL's *maſter joins a remarkable ſet of company. Their characters.* CHRYSAL *changes his ſervice. Account of the enterpriſe on which his late maſter's companions were going; with the convincing arguments they uſed to procure obedience to their commands.* 188

CHAP. X.

The ruinous appearance of the ſcene of action ſupplies matter for mirth to thoſe whoſe trade it is to laugh at every thing. The point carried againſt law and reaſon. Enquiry into the cauſe of this. The riſe of the prejudice againſt the profeſſion of an actor. 193

CHAP. XI.

Continued. The common conſequence of exceſs of zeal. The profeſſed intent of theatrical repreſentations defeated by this abſurd prejudice againſt actors. The vices againſt which this prejudice is levelled, in reality the effects of

of it; with the means for remedying this, and other abuſes. Page 197

CHAP. XII.

The ſyſtem of policy, by which CHRYSAL'*s maſter governed his ſtate. Account of his methods of parrying poets. The reaſon why ſo few new plays are acted. Enquiry into the preſent ſtate of genius. The general motives for writing plays preclude them from ſucceſs. Managers and Poets equally in fault, in their dealings with each other.* 202

CHAP. XIII.

CHRYSAL'*s maſter ſits in judgement on ſome pieces offered to him. A poet of faſhion enters. The arguments by which he ſupports his work againſt the objections of* CHRYSAL'*s maſter, who makes ſome curious dramatical ſtrictures. The poet, driven from his laſt retreat, the intereſt of his great friends, by the common cant of the houſe's being* FULL *for the ſeaſon, departs in a rage, denouncing their reſentment, which* CHRYSAL'*s maſter ſhows his reaſon not to fear the effects of.* 207

CHAP. XIV.

Continuation. CHRYSAL'*s maſter rejects the work of a poet for his ignorance of the laws of the drama. More dramatical ſtrictures The poet modeſtly inſiſts, that his play is refuſed only becauſe it wants the intereſt of the great; and goes off in a huff. Another poet repulſed for his attachment to*

to the laws of the drama. Arguments againſt theſe laws. The poet refuſes to conform to the preſent taſte; and makes an appeal. One more poet refuſed, only for wanting every poetical talent. Remarks on ſomething that affects more than care to own it. CHRYSAL *changes his ſervice, on an occaſion not common.* Page 212

CHAP. XV.

CHRYSAL's *maſter engages in a genteel amour, a delicate way of refining pleaſure. His miſtreſs perſuades him that ſhe has poiſoned him and herſelf. His ſituation on hearing this. Striking proofs of medical ſkill, with the advantage of a regular courſe of practice. An exemplary inſtance of charity and forgiveneſs diverts the doctors' attention to the murthereſs.* 220

CHAP. XVI.

The recovery of the murthereſs opens a new ſcene. She clears up the myſtery, leſs to the ſatisfaction of the doctors, than of their noble patient, who rewards her liberally for her good news; and ſends them off without their errand. Reflexions on ſome genteel matters. CHRYSAL *changes his ſervice.* 226

CHAP. XVII.

CHRYSAL's *maſter goes to be admitted into an extraordinary Society. Some reflexions not ſuited to the taſte of the times. Riſe of this ſociety. A deſcription of a monaſtery, with an account of its members, and of ſome of its rules.* 232

CHAP. XVIII.

CHRYSAL's *master arrives at the monastery. The manner of his being admitted into the society. Character of his competitor. The method he took to revenge the society's injustice in preferring* CHRYSAL's *master to him. The mirth of the company disturbed by the enterance of* THE DEVIL, *just as he was invoked by* CHRYSAL's *master. The effect of such a visitor upon the company. The* DEVIL *fixes upon* CHRYSAL's *master in particular, and makes him squeak.* Page 238

CHAP. XIX.

The DEVIL *is degraded to a* BABOON, *and his appearance well accounted for, which restores the mirth and courage of the company, and particularly of* CHRYSAL's *master, who exerts himself to recover his character. The appearance of the be-deviled* BABOON *is traced next day to his introducer, who at the instance of* CHRYSAL's *master is expelled the society, for presuming to ridicule their rites. Further consequences of this affair make the superiour break up his monastery, and build a church.* 245

CHAP. XX.

A further account of the rules of the convent; with some striking instances of œconomy. A seeming inconsistency accounted for from a principle not sufficiently understood. Some remarkable effects of vanity. Reason of the abuse of wealth. 251

CHAP.

CHAP. XXI.

Account of the members of the ſociety. The hiſtory of the ſuperiour. The particular qualifications by which he aroſe in life. Succeſs in a private inſtance encourages him to try his talents in an higher ſphere, from which he ſoon deſcends with diſgrace. A ſtriking inconſiſtency in his character. 256

CHAP. XXII.

Continuation of the Hiſtory of the ſuperiour. The inconſiſtency in his character accounted for. The reaſon of his being ſent early to travel for education. Political principles all neceſſary to be attended to in a tutor. The method and effect of his tutor's care to inſtruct him in religion. A frightful ſtory gives riſe to a frightful dream, which is interrupted ſtill more frightfully. A tremendous apparition terrifies him into a ſwoon. Account of the apparition. 260

CHAP. XXIII.

Continuation. Behaviour of the tutor on finding his pupil in a ſwoon. He recovers; and terrifies his tutor, by miſtaking him for a ſaint. Charity begins at home. The tutor ſagaciouſly gueſſes at the meaning of the miſtake; and piouſly reſolves to improve it. The pupil's full and true account of the apparition, with the tutor's honeſt addition to it. His repentance and converſion. His tutor moderates his zeal, for weighty reaſons. He relapſes; and his tutor, for private reaſons, divulges the whole

whole affair. The method he took to invalidate the ſtory. Page 266

CHAP. XXIV.

Account of the members continued. Hiſtory of one who turned libertine in ſpeculation, after he had loſt the power of being ſo in practice. How this happened; the force of literary vanity; and the reaſon why it is ſtronger than any other. Inſtances of the advantages reaped from encouraging genius. A new method of flattery is ſucceſsful where all others had failed, and by a maſterſtroke makes vanity gain a ſignal triumph over virtue. 273

CHRYSAL:

OR, THE ADVENTURES OF

A GUINEA.

CHAP. I.

Introduction. CHRYSAL *enters into a new ſervice. His maſter finds an ingenious excuſe for returning home; but is unexpectedly ſtopped ſhort by the way. In the common courſe of buſineſs* CHRYSAL *changes his ſervice: Character of his new maſter.*

(*THERE being a War between* SPAIN *and* ENGLAND, CHRYSAL, *in the ſhape of a* DOUBLOON, *is preſented by a* SPANISH *governor to the captain of an* ENGLISH *man of war cruiſing off the coaſt of* MEXICO, *in return for his quitting his ſtation to give him an opportunity of ſending the treaſure to* EUROPE.)

" As this was a compliment of great conſe-
" quence to the *Spaniards*, the captain had

"been ſo handſomely conſidered for it, that "his deſires were ſatisfied, and he only wiſhed "to be ſafe at home to enjoy the wealth he "had ſo happily acquired."—*Vol.* I. *Page* 53.

However impatient though he might be to return, it was neceſſary for him to find ſome pretence to juſtify a conduct ſo contrary to his duty, the time appointed for his continuing on that ſtation not being near expired.

But a proper knowledge of the world is never at a loſs for expedients. He immediately came to a right underſtanding with the maſter of the ſhip, who alarming him ſuddenly at midnight with an account that her *ſtern-poſt* was looſe, and the reſt of the officers between ſleeping and waking formally ſigning his report without examining, he *bore away* directly for home with an happy heart, anticipating in imagination the enjoyment of all thoſe pleaſures, which he had hitherto looked at with a longing eye from a diſtance.

When man, confiding in his own wiſdom, quits the ſtraight path to ſtrike out a nearer to his wiſhes, he generally blunders into that which leads directly to their diſappointment. My maſter had not proceeded many days on his voyage, when he *fell in* one morning, juſt at the dawn, with a mighty fleet, from which it was impoſſible for him to eſcape. His anxiety made him inſtantly conclude them enemies. He curſed his fate in the bitterneſs of his ſoul,

and

and leaving the care of the ſhip to his officers, pretended to be ſick, and threw himſelf on his bed, in agonies little ſhort of deſpair. "Was it for "this? (exclaimed he wringing his hands and "gnaſhing his teeth) was it for this I betrayed "my truſt, and favoured the enemies whom I "was ſent to diſtreſs?—For this did I put my "honour in the power of a venal wretch, and "deſert my ſtation in direct diſobedience to "my orders? But I am juſtly rewarded! I have "ſtopped at nothing to gather wealth, and now "I loſe that and my liberty together. May "every villain meet the ſame fate!"

But the ſeverity of his diſtreſs laſted not long. As ſoon as it was clear day, the fleet which cauſed his fears was found to be *Engliſh*; the moment he was informed of which he recovered from his ſickneſs, and, putting the beſt face he could upon the matter, went to wait upon the Admiral.

Though the fleet which the Admiral commanded was irreſiſtibly ſuperior to any that could poſſibly be oppoſed to it, he was ſo deſirous of every addition of ſtrength, that he received my maſter with evident pleaſure; and, never enquiring what had been the cauſe of his quitting his ſtation, informed him whither they were going, and congratulated him on the opportunity he would have of making his fortune.

But this opportunity, promiſing as it might appear, had no temptations for my maſter, whoſe thoughts were turned another way. However, to carry off the chagrin which he could not conceal, he expreſſed his concern in the ſtrongeſt terms at not being able to bear a part in ſo glorious an enterpriſe, and produced the *report* of the condition of his ſhip, by which ſhe was repreſented to be incapable of ſervice, the reaſon, as he alledged, for his having quitted his proper ſtation. This inſtantly changed the whole ſcene. The Admiral, aſſuming all the conſequence of his unbounded authority, anſwered, with a ſupercilious look, that he would order the ſhip to be ſurveyed by the proper officers, and then turned away, without deigning to take any further notice of him.

As this was no more than my maſter had expected, his knowledge of the world, which brought him into the ſcrape, ſoon ſuggeſted the proper means for preventing any diſagreeable conſequences from it. Accordingly, when the *ſurvey* was regularly made next morning, he was *honourably* acquitted; but the maſter of the ſhip was broke *for his error*, and the other officers ſeverely rebuked, for not having examined his report before they ſigned it.

In the courſe of theſe tranſactions, I changed my ſervice for that of the Admiral's ſecretary, who directly gave me to the Admiral in ſome dealings between them.

When

When I entered into the poſſeſſion of my new maſter, he was lolling in a liſtleſs manner on a ſofa, in his *ſtate-room*, where every art was exerted to counteract nature, and elude the mid-day heat, in one of the fierceſt climates of the Torrid Zone. A gown of thinneſt ſilk hung looſely over his large limbs; the radiance of the ſun was ſoftened by ſhades of linen drawn before the open windows, and kept conſtantly wet, to cool the air as it entered through them; and every diſagreeable ſavour was drowned in the moſt delicate perfumes.

The contraſt between ſuch magnificent luxury, and the condition of thoſe, whoſe numbers made his ſtrength, ſhowed in the moſt glaring light the infatuation of vanity, in diſplaying ſuch temptations to its own deſtruction, as the moſt implicit obedience to the laws could hardly be ſuppoſed proof to.

The aukwardneſs with which my maſter bore his ſtate ſhowing that it was not natural to him, I looked back to his paſt life, to ſee by what illuſtrious actions he had riſen to ſuch an exalted ſtation; but, to my ſurpriſe, diſcovered that the foundation of his fortune had been no more than a *phlegmatic indolence*, and *ſervility of ſoul*, which induced his ſuperiors to entruſt power in his hands, without apprehenſion of its raiſing him to a conſequence that might claſh with their deſigns on any future occaſion.

I ſee you are aſtoniſhed that a perſon of ſuch a turn ſhould ever engage in active ſcenes, or be entruſted with the conduct of an enterpriſe ſo oppoſite to his diſpoſition, as to make ſucceſs improbable. To unexperienced reaſon ſuch things muſt ſeem unaccountable; but the leaſt acquaintance with the ways of man would ſoon reconcile you to greater abſurdities. The *convenience* of the parent, not the *genius* of the child, is in general the only thing conſidered in the choice of a profeſſion on which the ſucceſs of life depends; and this is the reaſon why ſo few are eminent in things ſo eaſy to be eminent in; and when at length a perſon may have it in his power to quit a profeſſion which he did not chooſe, it is too late for him to chooſe another, and therefore he plods on with habitual indifference, not knowing what elſe to do with himſelf.

This may remove your ſurpriſe as far as it concerns my maſter's firſt entering into, and continuing in ſuch a way of life. As to his fitneſs for ſo difficult and important a command, that was the thing leaſt thought of when it was entruſted to him. The *inſignificancy* of his character, and his *ſervility* to his ſuperiors pointed him out as the perſon proper for their purpoſe, as they not only made them ſecure that he would not go beyond their orders, but would alſo put it in their power to arrogate to themſelves the merit of ſucceſs, or lay the blame of miſcarriage upon

upon him; and for these great qualifications only did they choose him on this occasion to execute *the design of another*, who had been guilty of the unpardonable crime of showing that he knew more than themselves, and whose penetration and activity of soul might too probably have made him see through their designs, and push matters farther than was consistent with them.

CHAP. II.

Motives of the enterprise in which CHRYSAL*'s master was engaged. In a private conference between him and his agent, some curious secrets, in a business not generally understood, are laid open, and a seeming contradiction naturally reconciled.*

WHENEVER *England* is at war with any of her neighbours, the effects are felt to the extremities of the globe. The armament which my master now commanded was sent against one of the most important and wealthiest settlements of the *Spaniards* in that part of the world; not indeed with an ambitious design of annexing it to the state, or reembursing any part of the expenses of the war, but merely to distress the enemy by its destruction, and enrich those immediately employed in the conquest; the prospect of which, and the consequent schemes to accomplish it, so entirely engrossed the attention of them all, except my master, that they disregarded the difficulties, and ran so eagerly into the dangers of the attempt, though such and so many as were sufficient to have damped the ardour of any beings directed by reason, and not insensible to the first principle of human action, that his phlegmatick disposition was no impediment to their success, as it left them at liberty to pursue such measures as the

the inſtant occaſion ſhould ſhow to be expedient, without the delay of conſulting him.—I ſay, "except my maſter;" for not all the cares of ſo extenſive a command, all the hurry and buſtle around him, could ever ruffle the characteriſtick ſtagnation of his mind.

He was juſt awoke from his noon-tide nap, when his Clerk laid the bag, *in which I was*, upon the table, along with ſome papers. The chink of the gold immediately attracted his attention. "Eh!" (ſaid he, rubbing his eyes and yawning) "what is it o'clock?"—And being told, "Aye! (continued he, ſtretching and "yawning again) I thought I had overſlept my-"ſelf—I am ſo heavy! This climate is fit for "nothing but ſleeping."—Then riſing languidly, "What papers are thoſe? (ſaid he) Did "I not ſay, I would not be troubled about bu-"ſineſs?"

"The *ſurvey of that ſhip*, and your own ac-"counts for the *out-ſets* of this expedition, "(anſwered the Clerk) which, if you pleaſe, "you had better look over now, as we ſhall "have others to attend to ſoon. I am ſorry to "ſay, it does not anſwer your expectations, but "the people alledged, that they had been made "to pay ſo extravagantly for their *contracts*, "that it was impoſſible for them to ſink the "qualities of the ſtores ſo low, as to be able "to give you any thing worth your accept-"ance."

" Not able to give me any thing!" (ſaid the Admiral, who had been rouſed from his lethargick indifference by the firſt mention of his own affairs) " They lie, the ſcoundrels; and " I'll make them know it. The *ſick-liſts* ſhow " that they have ſunk them with a vengeance, " and beyond every degree of reaſon; and if " they think that I'll connive at their murthering " the men, without having any ſhare in the " profit, they ſhall find themſelves damnably " *out in their reckoning*; and therefore do you " go directly to every Purſer in the fleet, and " order them to have a *ſurvey* privately made of " their worſt ſtores, to produce when I call for " it. I'll make them *come down*, and hand- " ſomely too, or they ſhall repent it."——

" But, Sir, is there not danger of their be- " ing provoked, by ſuch an attack, to ſay *ſome-* " *thing improper*; and that *they who made the* " *contracts* with them may do you an ill office " on another occaſion? There are *wheels with-* " *in wheels*."——

" Let them, if they can! (anſwered the " Admiral, clapping his hands a-kimbo) I ſhall " trouble them no more. If I mind my *hits* " this *trip*, I ſhall be as rich as the beſt of them, " and will ſtay at home, and take my eaſe, as " well as they; and as to their ſpeaking, whom " are they to ſpeak to? Tell my brother that " I am a knave!—No! no! we ſhall hardly " hear tales of each other. Things hang too

" cloſe

" close together for that. Do you, therefore, " mind your business, and leave these matters " to me."——

" But may not they spread stories abroad, " which may injure your character with the " publick?——

" My character! Not in the least. Such " stories affect only the *Clerks*, and such low " people, whose *perquisites* these things are *re-* " *puted* to be, and who only appear in them: " but that can't be said to injure them nei- " ther; *for what Clerk ever had a character that* " *could be injured?* Ha! ha! ha! So that " your care for characters, forsooth, is quite " unnecessary. Do what you will, you can- " not suffer in that. All you have to do is to " mind your business; and when you have got " money no one will enquire about your cha- " racter."——

Saying this, he waved his hand to the Clerk to withdraw, and then walking a turn or two about his *great cabbin*, opened the money-bag, and telling the contents, put a few pieces, *among which I was*, into his pocket, and locked up the rest in his strong box, after which he threw himself again on the sofa, to rest after the fatigue of so much business.

You seem at a loss how to reconcile the sentiments which my master discovered in this conference with the luxury and magnificence of every thing about him. But they contradict not

each other in the leaſt. In the tranſactions with his Clerk, he ſhowed the genuine motions of his heart; but with the other he has nothing to do. They are entirely at the expenſe of the publick, though in a manner not obvious to every eye, being a kind of tax eſtabliſhed by cuſtom on the *Purſers* of men of war, under the appearance indeed of a *preſent* to their commanders, but in reality as a *bribe* for conniving at their impoſitions; and this tax it is that enables thoſe commanders to live up to their rank, which their juſt pay would never do—a ſtriking inſtance of that wiſe *œconomy*, which, *to ſave a penny, lays a man under the neceſſity of ſtealing a pound.*

CHAP.

CHAP. III.

The behaviour of CHRYSAL*'s maſter on hearing an intereſting piece of news, with his conciſe method of conducting an enterpriſe.* CHRYSAL *changes his ſervice for that of a perſon of a very different character. An eloquent ſpeech produces the uſual effects of eloquence.*

MY *new* maſter had not paſſed his time long in this agreeable manner, when the Officer next to him in command entered haſtily, and told him, in a tranſport of joy, that the man at his maſt-head had *made* the land.

"What land?" (ſaid my maſter, unmoved at the news, or the manner in which it was delivered by the other, whoſe eyes flaſhed fire as he ſpoke) "What land does he *make?*"

"The place of our deſtination! (replied "the Officer:) I had juſt then taken an ob-"ſervation myſelf, and am convinced I am "right."——

"Well then, (returned my maſter) if you "are ſure it is the place, here are your inſtruc-"tions. You are to lead the van, and cover "the landing, about which proper directions "will be given by the General: when that is "done you ſhall have further orders."—Then, ſwelling with the thought of his own conſequence, and reſolving to ſupport his dignity by an

an uncommon effort of generosity. "Has the "fellow (said he) been rewarded for his "news?"

"Not yet (answered the Officer:) the "moment I heard it, I ran up myself to the "mast-head, and, as soon as I was convinced he "was right, flew to acquaint you. But I shall "remember him when I go back."

"And, pray, when you do, give him *this* in "my name," (replied my master, putting his hand into his pocket, and reaching *me* to him;) "the men's spirits must be kept up. We shall "have warm work of it—warm work!"——

"Glorious work! (added the Officer) the "trophies of your fame will now be established "in the opposite extremities of the globe. Few "attain to such happiness."

"Aye! (said the Admiral, puffing and sweat-"ing with the sense of his great achievements) "I have done something to be talked of in more "places than one. I have endured the severi-"ties of various climates. But we must bear "every thing in the service of our country!— "We must bear every thing without complain-"ing."

"Have you any further commands, Sir, "(said the Officer.) It is proper I should be on "board. I see several of the ships have now "made the signal of seeing land."——

"Nothing more at this time (answered the "Admiral.) You have your orders, and will

"take

" take the beſt method to execute them. *Only* " *obſerve to keep as clear as poſſible of that other* " *man's ſcheme. I had rather all ſhould miſcarry,* " *than appear in the leaſt indebted to him for ſuc-* " *ceſs.*"

My *new* maſter on this withdrew, leaving the Admiral to enjoy the contemplation of his own conſequence, and keep himſelf cool till dinner.

If the indolence of my late maſter was inconſiſtent with his ſtation, the activity of my preſent ſeemed to exceed the abilities of an human being. The moment he got to his own ſhip he made a ſignal for all the Captains in his diviſion, and the General, to come on board him; and then ordering his ſhip's crew to be called *aft*, he went to the *barricadoes*, and waving his hat over his head, " Courage, my lads (ſaid " he) the day is our's. The Admiral has given " us leave to take yonder town, with all the " treaſure in it, ſo that we have nothing to do " now, but to make our fortunes as faſt as we " can, for the place can never hold out againſt " us. The Purſer will give every brave fel- " low a can of punch to drink proſperity to " Old *England*, and then we'll go about our " buſineſs with ſpirit. We ſhall all be as rich " as Jews. The place is paved with gold, " which the lubbery *Dons* have gathered for us. " Old *England* for ever is the word, and the " day is our's."

This

This eloquent harangue had the effect that eloquence uſually has, *it tranſported the hearers out of their ſenſes.* They anſwered with three chears, which made the welkin ring, and then went ſkipping and dancing with joy to get their punch; a foretaſte of their good fortune, which many of them would not have given up for all their expectations.

As they were going off, my maſter happened to ſee among the croud the man who had firſt diſcovered the land, and calling to him, "Here, "ſhip-mate (ſaid he, giving him a doub-"loon) here is ſomething the Admiral has "ſent you for your good *look-out*: and take "this alſo from me (giving him another) "and I hope to give you an hundred more for "hoiſting your colours on the top of yonder "walls."——

"Aye! noble Captain," (ſaid the Sailor, ſhrugging his ſhoulders, and making his beſt bow) "and ſo I will, or it ſhall coſt me a worſe "fall than from the main-top-gallant-maſt-"head, that is, when the ſhip takes *a heel:* "I'll pull down proud *Spain*, and clap Old "*England* in its place."

The ſpirit which my maſter ſhowed in every word and action intereſted me ſo far in his favour, that I was pleaſed at his not having parted with me on this occaſion.

By this time the General and the Captains were come on board, and being ſhown into the great

great cabbin, "Good news, gentlemen," (ſaid my maſter in an extacy, ſhaking every one of them by the hand as they entered) "I bring "you good news! Yonder is the object of our "hopes, the place that is to make our for-"tunes, and crown us with glory, if it is not "our own faults, for the Admiral has given us "general orders to proceed in the beſt manner "we can, and without loſing time or opportu-"nity in waiting to conſult him on every occa-"ſion."

This news filled them all with the higheſt ſpirits. They congratulated each other on a ſucceſs of which they made no doubt; and having concerted the meaſures proper to be taken, returned to their ſhips to carry them into inſtant execution.

CHAP.

CHAP. IV.

The General profeſſes an uncommon motive for military ardour. An Officer deſires to ſpeak with him, the mention of whoſe name opens ſome ſecrets in the ſervice. Account of the Officer. An extraordinary inſtance of ignorance of the world. He ſignalizes himſelf at the expence of his ſuperiors, who reward him accordingly. The beſt qualifications for riſing in the army, with reaſons why things were otherwiſe under another commander.

AS ſoon as the Captains of the men of war were gone, "Now, my deareſt friend, (ſaid my maſter to the General, who ſtaid) "you will have an opportunity not only of "gaining ſuch glory as will add luſtre to the "dignity of your birth, but alſo of acquiring a "fortune to ſupport that dignity properly."

"True? (anſwered the General eagerly) "But, powerful as theſe motives are, my heart is "ſtimulated by one ſtill ſtronger, on this happy "occaſion."

"How! can any motive be ſtronger than ho-"nour and independence?"——

"Yes, gratitude! grateful anxiety to prove "myſelf not unworthy of his favour, who pro-"cured me this opportunity. He promoted my "intereſt with the ardour of a friend. He ſup-"ported it with his whole weight; and in a "manner ſtaked his honour for my abilities.

" Till I have acquitted him, therefore, by a " ſignal diſcharge of my duty, I can have no " thought for myſelf."——

" Theſe ſentiments prove you worthy of his " favour; nor can you poſſibly ſerve yourſelf " more, than by paying this debt honourably to " him, in which I ſhall think myſelf happy to " give you every inſtance of that aſſiſtance " which the nature of my command ſo fortu- " nately puts in my power."

" I doubt you not; and therefore, as our un- " animity deprives us of the excuſe of diſagree- " ment, which former commanders in the dif- " ferent ſervices have made for their miſcar- " riages, we muſt be doubly careful not to omit " any thing that can enſure ſucceſs."

The friends then embraced with ardour, and were juſt ſeparating to attend the buſineſs of their different departments, when a ſubaltern Officer deſired to ſpeak with the General. On hearing his name, " Did you not know that I am en- " gaged?" (ſaid the General, with an embar- raſſed air) " He muſt wait till I am at leiſure."

" Don't let me hinder you (ſaid my ma- " ſter.) I am juſt going."——

" You do not, in the leaſt. He can have no " buſineſs with me but what you may hear; " and indeed what you muſt help me to extri- " cate myſelf from; for I know he comes upon " ſome ſcheme of *diſtinguiſhing* himſelf, that will " only give me trouble."——

" How

" How can that be? If you do not approve " of what he propoſes, ſurely you have it in your " power to reject it, without fear of giving him " offenſe; or if, on the other hand, you think " it practicable, and worth purſuing, I cannot " ſuppoſe that any honour or advantage that can " poſſibly accrûe to him, can make you unwil- " ling to carry it into execution."——

" Moſt certainly not. The difficulty I am " under is of a very different nature. The " character of the man gives me reaſon to be- " lieve, that he will not propoſe any thing, " which is not both practicable and important; " and, as it is not in my power to reward his " ſucceſs, his doing any thing out of the com- " mon courſe of duty would involve me in the " higheſt diſtreſs, both on account of the in- " juſtice to him, and the poor figure I muſt " make myſelf on ſo flagrant a breach of my " own publick declaration, *that, in the diſpoſal of* " *all preferments, I would pay due reſpect to ſenio-* " *rity, where ſuperior merit did not give a ſtronger* " *claim.*"——

" Well! and why ſhould it not be in your " power to fulfil that declaration?"

" My deareſt friend, I bluſh to think of, " much more to expoſe even to you the mortify- " ing hardſhips laid upon me. The truth is, I " have, ſince I made that declaration, another " Officer, who was in his cradle ſince this has " been in the army, and has never yet ſeen the

" face

" face of an enemy, put upon me for the firſt " preferment, by one whoſe directions I muſt " not diſobey, however detrimental to the ſer- " vice."——

" That is a diſagreeable circumſtance, I own. " But who is this Officer, your good opinion of " whom gives you ſuch apprehenſions?"—

" He is a military enthuſiaſt, *who knows ſo* " *little of the world, as to think of riſing in the* " *army by merit alone*; and with that view, not " ſatisfied with doing his duty in the moſt ſignal " manner, is always a voluntier, wherever he " thinks any glory can be acquired; though " his own particular experience, as well as ge- " neral obſervation, might have long ſince con- " vinced him of the folly of ſuch a thought. " You muſt know him. This is he who, in " that unlucky affair upon the coaſt of *France*, " made a ſtand with the ſingle company to " which he belonged (and which he had ſo at- " tached to him, by giving out of his own pocket " to ſuch as behaved well a daily gratuity in " addition to their pay, that they would follow " him any where) to cover the embarkation of " the troops, while every officer was ſhifting for " himſelf, as he actually did in a great meaſure, " till moſt of his little party was cut off, as it " was a thouſand to one but they all muſt, " unſupported as they were; though it appeared " after, that if a proper force had been poſted " in that very place at firſt, or he re-enforced in

" any

" any time, the heavy loſs and diſgrace ſuffered " on that occaſion might have been prevented. " But ſtill that was reckoned no buſineſs of " his; and therefore all the reward he got for " his pains was to have two Officers, *who were* " *not even in the action*, put over his head, and " the company's money, which he had loſt " along with all his own baggage, *refuſed to be* " *made good to him, becauſe he was a voluntier on* " *that attack.* For (ſorry I am to ſay it!) that " is not the way to riſe in the army now o'days. " Where a man has not intereſt to puſh him " forward, *being able to ſing a good ſong*, or *pimp* " *well*, or *having an handſome wife* or *ſiſter*, " with a proper degree of humility and complai- " ſance, will avail him more than all the cou- " rage and conduct in romance. In my patron's " time, indeed, things were not ſo. Brave him- " ſelf, he expected that every man under him " ſhould be brave alſo; nor would let any re- " commendation compenſate for the want of " merit in thoſe who ſought his favour; *as his* " *own intereſt and honour were naturally and inſe-* " *parably connected with thoſe of his country*; *and* " *he was not lifted up to power, only to be the tool* " *of a party*; *nor obliged to ſupport himſelf in it by* " *intrigue, without any other view or motive than* " *that of amaſſing its emoluments*; and therefore it " has been the great misfortune of this Officer, " that he never ſerved immediately under him.

CHAP.

CHAP. V.

CHRYSAL's maſter makes ſome cloſe remarks on certain matters. The method which the General took to parry the Officer. CHRYSAL's maſter makes up the affair. The General gives the Officer an opportunity of diſtinguiſhing himſelf, which he does in a ſignal manner.

IT is remarked that men ſeldom enquire into the cauſes of things continually before their eyes. Habitual acquaintance prevents that curioſity, which is one of the ſtrongeſt incentives to knowledge. They have always ſeen ſuch things; and therefore have never enquired how they came to be ſo.

My maſter, who had long obſerved the fact, but never thought of the cauſe, was ſtruck with what his friend ſaid. After ſome pauſe: "I am "afraid what you ſay is too true!" (ſaid he) "and cannot help attributing it to a cauſe, not "much to the credit of the commanders, who "certainly would never diſcourage merit in "others, were they not conſcious that they had "not riſen by it themſelves; and therefore look "upon it with an envious eye, as a reproach to "them. Indeed, it can ſcarcely be expected, "that *a General, who has ſpent his life in paying* "*court to a miniſter, or favourite, or who was* "*preferred only for his intereſt in parliament*, ſhould

"act

" act otherwiſe. But, what will you do with " this Officer? It will have an odd look if " you don't ſee him; at the ſame time, if he " ſhould propoſe any thing of real conſequence, " I am abſolutely at a loſs how to adviſe you " to act."——

" The only method I can think of, is this: " His temper is warm, and his notions of ho- " nour punctiliouſly high. I will, therefore, re- " ceive him with a diſtance that I know will " hurt his ſenſibility, and provoke him to ſay " ſomething, of which I may take advantage to " break off the conference, without entering " into the ſubject of his coming; for he ſpeaks " as boldly as he acts; and thinks it beneath " him to ſoften his ſentiments by any qualifying " expreſſion."

Accordingly, the General ordered the Officer to be admitted, and aſking him ſlightly what was his buſineſs? " I come, Sir (anſwered he) " to inform you, that I have diſcovered a proper " place for landing the troops, and formed a " plan for that purpoſe."

" You have diſcovered, Sir!" (interrupted the General haughtily) " Pray when, and how " did you make this notable diſcovery?"

" Juſt now, Sir!" (returned the Officer) too intent upon the object he had in view to take notice of the manner of his reception. " The *tranſport*, in which I was, happening to " *ſtretch away a-head*, I got out a boat, and have " carefully

" carefully reconnoitred a great part of the coaſt, " in the thick of the enemy's fire."

" And, pray, Sir," (interrupted the General again, determined not to let him explain himſelf) " who gave you orders to reconnoitre in " this manner?"

" No one, Sir!" (anſwered the Officer warmly, and hurt at the manner in which the General ſpoke.) " I never wait for orders, to do " any thing in which my own ſafety only is " concerned, when I think it for the advantage " of the ſervice."

" When you think! (retorted the General " ſternly.) I ſhould be glad to know who has " appointed you to judge of thoſe things? At " this rate the whole army will be generals by " and by; and every one will be out recon- " noitring forſooth, when they ſhould be at " their poſts; but I'll put a ſtop to ſuch con- " tempt of diſcipline, and make you know, that " it is your duty to wait for orders, not to go " rambling thus, wherever you pleaſe."—Saying which, he called one of his *Aides-de Camp*, and putting the Officer in arreſt, ſent him away, burſting with indignation and reſentment, to his ſhip.

When he was gone, " I am very ſorry (ſaid " my maſter) that your engagement to that other " man laid you under a neceſſity of treating " this Officer ſo harſhly. I have conceived a " very good opinion of him: he appeared to be

" actuated by true zeal; and ſpoke with a con-
" fidence, that ſhowed he was convinced of
" what he ſaid; for which reaſon I am reſolved
" to reconnoitre that place myſelf, and don't
" doubt but I ſhall find his account of it to
" be juſt."——

" Nor do I in the leaſt. He has an head to
" plan, and an heart to execute the moſt im-
" portant enterpriſes; and I am as ſorry for
" what I have been forced to do as you. But,
" as ſoon as I have it in my power to reward
" his merit, I'll give him every opportunity of
" diſplaying it, till when this affair will keep
" him out of the way."

I ſee you are anxious to know the ſequel of this Officer's ſtory. To avoid breaking the thread of my narrative with it, therefore, at another time, I will conclude it here.

My maſter, as he ſaid, went that very night, and reconnoitred the place pointed out by the Officer, whoſe account of it proved ſo juſt, that he repaired to him directly, and enquiring into his plan for landing the troops, found it ſo judicious, that he immediately adopted the whole, and carried it into execution with ſucceſs.

After ſome days, when the Officer's impatience of being idle thus in the midſt of action had in a great meaſure got the better of his reſentment, and the ſevere loſs ſuſtained in the ſiege made the worth of men more attended to, my maſter attacked him on his *foible*, his paſſion

for

for glory, and zeal for the ſervice of his country, and prevailed on him to return to his duty, on the General's making an apology for what he had done, which he attributed to his anxiety, and apprehenſion of the enemy's being put on their guard by his reconnoitring in that daring manner; and, to cancel the diſgrace of the arreſt, treated him with particular attention; and as he was now at liberty to do juſtice to his merit (the other, who had been impoſed upon him, being provided for) gave him the firſt opportunity he could of ſignalizing himſelf, which he did in a manner that amply juſtified the opinion my maſter had conceived of him.

The affair was this—The General had reſolved to make an attack upon the principal redoubt that defended the fortreſs, and gave the command of it to him. The plan laid down by the General was, that an officer, with a party of men, ſhould go from another poſt, juſt before the dawn, to reconnoitre the redoubt, and, if he found that the fire of the night had made the impreſſion expected, a ſignal was to be given for this Officer to advance and make the attack. The other accordingly marched, but miſſed his way, and falling in with a leſſer redoubt, miſtook it for the object of his deſignation, and inconſiderately attacked it, upon which the ſignal was given for this Officer to proceed. The alarm had ſet the ſoldiers in the principal redoubt upon their guard, which he perceiving before he

came within their ſhot, and being ſenſible that his attempt could ſucceed only by ſurpriſe, by one of thoſe inſtantaneous efforts of genius, which mark the true military character, he reſolved, without a moment's heſitation that might diſcover his diſappointment, to try a ſtratagem of his own, ſince that of his General had been fruſtrated by this miſtake, and directed his march regularly towards the attack that was begun upon the leſſer redoubt, as if he had been ſent on purpoſe to ſupport it.

Deceived by this feint, the Officer who commanded in the principal redoubt, knowing the force there to be too weak to make reſiſtance, ſent the greater part of his own to their relief. This was what he had foreſeen. He, therefore, continued his march ſlowly, till they had got beyond him; and then facing ſuddenly about, puſhed with all ſpeed for the redoubt they had thus abandoned. The moment they ſaw this motion, they turned back, but the narrowneſs of the entrenchment in which they were prevented their making ſuch expedition, and coming up in a body, as his men did on the plain, ſo that he entered with the very foremoſt man of them, and made himſelf maſter of the place, with inconſiderable loſs.

The importance of this redoubt, the taking of which greatly facilitated the operations of the ſiege, enhanced the merit of the action. Nothing elſe was talked of in the army, where the fortune

fortune of this Officer was looked upon to be made. But no opportunity offered for promoting him during the remainder of the expedition, ſo that the only reward in the General's power to give him, was thanking him publickly at the head of the army, which he did in the ſtrongeſt terms. Reſolved, however, to be the inſtrument of his promotion, though he could not promote him himſelf, he repreſented him, on his return, in ſo advantageous a light to one, *whoſe inclination it was known to be, and who from his office ſhould have had it in his power to reward merit*, that he promiſed to do him juſtice.

But the delicacy of this Officer's ſenſe of honour defeated theſe generous intentions. He would not accept of the preferment offered him, without having at the ſame time reparation for the injuſtice he had ſuffered, by an honorary rank, ſuperior to thoſe who had been put over him: and, when this was refuſed, *for reaſons of convenience*, inſiſted on quitting the ſervice, in the permiſſion for which, his patron did juſtice to his character in the moſt authentick manner, before he himſelf reſigned an office, which he would hold no longer, than it was in his power to fulfil the declaration he had made on accepting it: "*That while he ſhould be in that* "*office, he would not only be a vigilant ſervant of* "*the crown, but alſo a faithful truſtee for the ho-* "*neſt claim of the brave and deſerving officer.*"

CHAP. VI.

CHRYSAL *accounts curiouſly for ſome intereſting points of policy. He ſupports his reaſon for not entering into the particulars of the ſiege, by ſome remarks on war, more juſt perhaps than popular; and aſſigns a motive for courage, not likely to be meant by thoſe who give it.*

I Have been ſo particular in the ſtory of this Officer, in order to give you ſome notion of matters, with which your manner of life has made you unacquainted, In his fate you ſee the conſequence of a ſubaltern's ſtriving to diſtinguiſh himſelf, by doing any thing more than his immediate duty.

This, however ſtrange it may appear to you, who judge only from reaſon, is ſtrictly conſiſtent with the principles of modern policy, which is calculated entirely for private convenience, without the leaſt regard to publick good. Every attempt of the kind is taken for an affront by his ſuperiors, as implying a deſign of forcing them to promote him, and putting himſelf in competition with them for the good opinion of the publick, and therefore diſcountenanced.

Indeed, if it were otherwiſe, few men of fortune or intereſt would, according to the preſent way of thinking, go into the army at all, *as they could not expect to enjoy their eaſe, or ſhow a prudent regard*

regard to their ſafety, without being ſubject to diſgraceful compariſons from the *officious aſſiduity* or *raſhneſs* of every man, deſperate in diſpoſition or circumſtances, who diſregarded life and all its pleaſures, or had no way of being able to live, but by hazarding the loſs of them.

In former times men entered into the profeſſion of arms with a certain proſpect of honour and advantage, if they could merit them, and therefore exerted all their abilities of mind and body, in emulation for ſo tempting a prize; but now, every idler, who is unfit for any other buſineſs, *purchaſes* a commiſſion, in order *to live upon the pay*; and as he is ſenſible that no efforts of his own can procure an addition to that pay, by raiſing him to an higher rank, he is ſatisfied to enjoy his bargain as eaſily as he can, and do no more than he needs muſt to avoid loſing it. And this will account to you for the difference between the *Engliſh* forces, now, and in thoſe days. Nor is the caſe otherwiſe with thoſe who get into the army by intereſt. They depend ſolely upon the ſame intereſt to puſh them forward, and therefore give themſelves no trouble to deſerve promotion, which they are convinced no deſert could procure them.—But, to quit reflexions not likely to be regarded, and return to my ſtory.

You muſt not expect a minute detail of the progreſs of this enterpriſe. The operations of war are too confuſed to give pleaſure to reaſon

in the repreſentation, too horrid not to give pain to humanity.

I ſee you think this too ſevere: but that is the effect of prejudice. When the victories, which have been blazoned higheſt, and reflected the greateſt honour on thoſe who gained them, are ſtripped of the falſe colouring laid on only to dazzle and deceive, and examined coolly, moſt of them will be found owing to ſome unforeſeen accident, ſome lucky improvement of a blunder of the enemy, or elſe an obſtinate perſeverance in their own, after every boaſted rule of art had been broke through, every reſource of judgement exhauſted in vain; and to have been attended by circumſtances of ſuch miſery and loſs to victors, as well as vanquiſhed, as tarniſhed all their glory, and infinitely over-balanced every advantage poſſible to be gained by them. I ſhall, therefore, mention only ſuch particulars as may contribute to illuſtrate this picture of the heart of man.

The ardour ſhown by the ſubaltern officers and private men in carrying on the ſiege, in which they ſuffered more from the inclemencies of a climate unnatural to them, and againſt which no proper proviſion had been made, though they had been delayed to meet its fierceſt fury, as well as from the diſeaſes cauſed by the badneſs of every neceſſary of life, than from all the efforts of the enemy, all the arts which the ingenuity of man has deviſed for the deſtruction

of

of his own unhappy ſpecies, was impoſſible to be accounted for from any other principle than *diſregard to a life deſtitute of every comfort and convenience that could endear it* — a remark which to the humane wiſdom of ſome may ſeem to juſtify the deficiency and badneſs of every kind of proviſion, too generally made for them on ſuch occaſions, while thoſe whoſe higher rank may be thought to animate them with a ſenſe of honour and ambitious hope, and who therefore may be thought not to want ſuch incitements to deſperation, enjoy a luxury ſcarce to be reconciled with the confuſion of ſuch an unſettled ſtate—that neither of theſe motives, though, powerful as they may be in general, will always prevail over a fooliſh fondneſs for life, inſtances appear in every war.

CHAP. VII.

One of the Captains under CHRYSAL's *maſter behaves in an extraordinary manner, and vindicates himſelf as extraordinarily. His crime is overlooked for prudential reaſons, which he miſtakes, and demands a tryal. He meets his deſerts.*

AS my maſter was attending, one morning, to the ſucceſs of an attack which he had ordered to be made, by ſome of *the men of war* under his command, upon a fort which principally obſtructed the progreſs of the ſiege, he was ſurpriſed to ſee one of them not only notoriouſly make the moſt ſhameful delay in *bearing down*, but alſo, the moment ſhe came within reach of it, inſtead of joining in the attack begun by the others, put about and quit her ſtation, without even attempting to do any thing.

Though the Captain of the ſhip had drawn the general diſeſteem of the corps upon him by his arrogant behaviour, and, by his moroſe treatment of his men and officers, raiſed ſuſpicions of his ſpirit, on this unerring maxim, that *cowardice is the inſeparable companion of cruelty*, yet, as he had thoſe powerful motives to courage, *pride of family* and *poverty*, and muſt know that the inevitable conſequence of ſuch a flagrant breach of duty muſt be a diſgraceful death, if it could not be properly accounted for, my maſter concluded

that ſome accident muſt have happened, which was the more probable, as the ſhip was the worſt in the fleet, and therefore, as ſoon as the affair was over, made his ſignal to come on board, that he might learn what was the matter.

Though the firſt ſight of him might have explained the whole, the fears of his heart being viſible in every feature of his haggard face, my maſter diſdained to aggravate his diſtreſs by an appearance of ſeverity, and only aſked him coolly the reaſon of his not having *borne down* to the attack with the ſame expedition as the other ſhips.

"Sir—Sir—Sir—" (faltered the trembling wretch, not ſufficiently recovered from his fright to expreſs the evaſion he had prepared) "I—I— "made all the expedition I poſſibly could."——

"How can you have the confidence to ſay ſo "(returned my maſter) when there were ſeveral "of your ſails which you never *ſet*?"

"That was not my fault, Sir (replied the "Captain, reſuming his natural aſſurance) how "could I ſet them, when I had ſent the *booms* "aſhore yeſterday, by your orders?"——

"The booms!" (interrupted my maſter, with a look of the moſt contemptuous aſtoniſhment.) "Can ſuch ignorance be poſſible? Surely, you "muſt have known, that the booms meant in "my orders where thoſe the boats are ſtowed "on, which were to be ſent aſhore, that the "men might not be hurt by the ſplinters in the "attack, not thoſe of your ſails!"——

" Very likely, Sir! it might have been ſo, " to be ſure. But as the order was to ſend all " my booms, without any ſuch exception, I did " not think I could juſtify diſobeying it on my " own opinion."——

" And, pray, Sir, how can you juſtify your " quitting your ſtation in the manner you did, " when you at length made a ſhift to come " up! Was that in obedience to your orders, " too?"——

" No, Sir! that was quite another thing. " When I came up, I ſaw the other ſhips had " ſuffered conſiderably, and, as I thought they " were ſufficient for the purpoſe, I judged it beſt " to ſave his Majeſty's ſhip entruſted to my care, " for another occaſion. That was my reaſon, " Sir."——

" A very prudential one, truely; but I believe " you ſhould add too, to ſave the Captain; for, " if I miſtake not greatly, that was not the leaſt " object of your care."——

" Very true, Sir! and with good reaſon too, " let me tell you; as I know that the intereſt of " my family, which has promoted me thus far, " will not fail to raiſe me higher. Men of low " birth, or whoſe relations will not ſerve them, " may ſet no value on their lives; but that is " not my caſe; I am akin to moſt of the nobi- " lity of my country, who always ſtand by their " own blood, where any preferment or advan- " tage is to be gotten! Hem! hem!"——

" I know

" I know their intereſt full well," (retorted my maſter, ſcarce able to ſuppreſs his indignation at ſuch inſolence) " and the cloſeneſs with " which they hang together; but, take care that " you do not depend upon them too far."

Unabaſhed by the manner in which this was ſaid, the Captain aſked if he had any further commands, and, being anſwered in the negative, marched off in triumph.

There are ſome crimes, in the puniſhment of which all men are more than ordinarily ſevere, in order to prove their own exemption from them. One of the firſt of theſe is cowardice, which, though often an involuntary defect of conſtitution, is juſtly reckoned a crime in military men, from the conſequences that may attend it, and as it makes them unable to perform the duties of a profeſſion which they ſhould not have entered into under a ſenſe of ſuch an incapacity.

All the Captains preſent were for puniſhing the offender inſtantly, in the moſt exemplary manner, for ſo flagrant a breach of duty. But my maſter, much as he deteſted the crime, and was provoked at the inſolence with which he ſtrove to carry it off, thought it better to overlook it for the preſent, than, by bringing him to juſtice, throw a diſgrace upon the forces, that might encourage the enemy to exert themſelves, in hopes of more inſtances of the kind.

But this moderation was diſappointed by a common cauſe. In a few days after, the Captain judging

judging by himſelf, that nothing but fear of giving offenſe to his great family could have prevented his being fallen upon directly (for, notwithſtanding his evaſions, he was conſcious of his crime) inſtead of improving that precious reſpite, to extenuate his guilt by ſome meritorious action, preſumed, upon meeting ſome inſtances of contempt from the reſt of his corps, to demand the juſtification of a publick tryal, in order to be formally acquitted of what he thought they dared not to convict him; and alſo to eſcape being involved in any further dangers during the expedition, as he knew the immediate conſequence of ſuch a demand muſt neceſſarily be ſuſpending him from his command till he ſhould be tried, which he knew could not be before the concluſion of the ſiege; and in this latter particular his expectation was not deceived.

This directly put an end to the prudential reaſons that had hitherto ſaved him, and of which the ſucceſsful progreſs of the ſiege had alſo greatly leſſened the force. Accordingly, to end his ſtory here in a few words, the tryal he deſired was granted, the reſult of which was, that he was *broke* with infamy, in contempt of all his boaſts and menaces of the power and reſentment of his family and friends.

CHAP.

CHAP. VIII.

CHRYSAL *accounts for the peculiar animoſities which ſome nations ſhow in war. A noble* SPANIARD *is taken priſoner in a ſally. He makes a propoſal to the General, which is accepted, and opens a proſpect of peace. A brutal outrage diſappoints his deſign, and embroils matters more than ever.*

THERE is nothing ſuggeſts ſo diſadvantageous an idea of mankind as the more than brutal ferocity with which they deſtroy each other, when quarrels between nations ſet the animoſity of individuals free from thoſe reſtraints of law with which neceſſity has taught human prudence to enforce the obſervation of the general duties of ſocial and moral life.

This animoſity, though, is never ſeen in its moſt ſanguine colours but in wars between people of different modes of religion. In that revelation of the will of Heaven, which ſhould be the rule of the religion of *Chriſtians*, the firſt precept in reſpect to the mutual intercourſe between man and man, is brotherly love to each other.

Such a precept bears intrinſick evidence of its divine origin. But ſtill human perverſion has dared to repreſent the breach of it as a duty of that revealed law, by confining the benefit of the

the obligation to the profeſſion of ſome particular opinions, and not only excluding the reſt of mankind from the circle of general brotherhood, but alſo making it a merit to propagate thoſe opinions, by the extirpation of all diſſenting from them, who are held incapable of the favour of Heaven, and therefore not entitled to the common rights of humanity.

Of all the people who profeſs *Chriſtianity*, the *Spaniards* are the moſt bigoted ſlaves to this narrow and groſs prejudice. With them, therefore, the natural animoſity of war is heightened, by religious abhorrence, againſt all who differ in opinion from them: and the laws which more enlightened nations have mutually agreed in, to reſtrain its ravages, and facilitate the reſtitution of peace, are often broken through, with a cruelty diſgraceful to the name of man.

In a ſally made one night by the beſieged, a noble *Spaniard*, who had penetrated ſo far into the trenches that it was impoſſible for him to get back, fell wounded into the hands of the *Engliſh*. The gallantry with which he had defended himſelf gained him reſpect from his enemies; and he was treated with that generous tenderneſs which brave men feel for each other.

Struck with a behaviour ſo different from what he expected, for he had been taught to look upon the *Engliſh* as enemies to mankind, and delighting in the moſt ſavage cruelty, he deſired to be led to the Commander, to whom, he ſaid, he had

had ſomething of conſequence to propoſe. Accordingly, as ſoon as his wounds were dreſſed, he was conducted to the General, with whom my maſter happened to be, and advancing to him with an air of dignity, "I am come, illuſtrious Chief (ſaid he) to thank you for the "humane and generous treatment I have received from your brave ſoldiers, which, if "known to my countrymen, would facilitate "an accommodation between them and you, "as dread of your power, raiſed, I am now "convinced, by injurious miſrepreſentations, "has hitherto principally prevented their liſtening to any terms from you. I ſpeak not this "from ignorance. My father is Governour of "the city. If you will let him know that I am "your captive, he will directly pay for me "whatever ranſom you deſire, and, on my return, I will faithfully remove the prejudices "which keep up their animoſity againſt you, "and by that means open the way to a reconciliation, till the pleaſure of our Sovereigns "ſhall reſtore peace to their ſubjects."

Such an offer required no arguments to enforce it. "The *Engliſh* (anſwered the General) "never abuſe the advantages they obtain in "war. I deſire no ranſom for your liberty; "you are free to return to your father when you "pleaſe; and if you can be the means of preventing the effuſion of more blood, as you "muſt be convinced that reſiſtance is in vain,

"I ſhall

" I ſhall think myſelf happy in having an op-
" portunity to ſhow reſpect to all whom you
" ſhall recommend as your friends, and deſerv-
" ing of it."

Theſe words filled the benevolent heart of the *Spaniard* with joy. " I fly (replied he eagerly)
" to execute a commiſſion, in which there can
" be no difficulty. As you are brave, and faith-
" ful to your Sovereign, you will require no
" terms which brave men and good ſubjects
" ought not to comply with."

The General then prevailed upon him to take ſome refreſhment, after which he and my maſter went with him to the head of the lines, where he diſmiſſed him with every mark of reſpect, attended by an Officer with *a flag of truce*, to bring back the Governour's anſwer.

But this pleaſing proſpect was ſoon over-caſt. The Officer and he had not advanced half the way between the trenches and the town, when they were fired upon by a party of *Spaniards*, who lay in ambuſh among the ruins of ſome old buildings. At the firſt ſound of their fire, the *Spaniard* ruſhed forward, in order to put a ſtop to it, and the Officer waved his flag of truce over his head, but that ſacred enſign afforded him no protection. They repeated their ſhot, and, ſeeing him fall, ran up, and, in deſpite of all the *Spaniard* could do, who received a mortal wound as he covered his body with his own, butchered him in the moſt barbarous manner, replying to his

his appeal to the law of nations, violated thus in him, that *Hereticks were excluded from the benefit of all laws.*

The indignation with which ſuch an outrage fired the *Engliſh* forces is not to be deſcribed. They vowed to exterminate a people who were unworthy to live; and in the firſt madneſs of their rage were with difficulty reſtrained from attempting to *ſtorm* the walls, before a breach ſhould give them even a poſſibility of ſucceſs.

The leaders did not fail to improve ſuch a ſpirit. Every thing was puſhed on with redoubled vigour; and war became more horrible, when blackened with a paſſion for revenge, which had taken ſuch poſſeſſion of the men, that it was ſome time before all the endeavours of their Officers could put a ſtop to their indulging it, and bring them back to that generous valour which is their peculiar glory.

CHAP.

CHAP. IX.

CHRYSAL's *attention is agreeably diverted by the appearance of a young* SPANIARD, *who throws himself at the feet of his master to prefer an extraordinary request. The History of* DON ALPHONSO GUZMAN, *the young* SPANIARD.

I Was relieved from the pain of attending to such scenes of horrour, by an affair that showed in a striking light the force of passions more natural to the heart of man.

As my master, who, active as light, was every where, and joined in every thing, was standing one night to see the effect of a battery that commanded a particular quarter of the town, a youth, who had made his escape from the garrison, and advanced in the face of all their fire, though sufficient to terrify any being capable of terrour, threw himself at his feet in agonies of distress.

My master, whose heart was warmed with that generous compassion which is inseparable from true courage, was struck at the sight, and, raising him from the ground, bade him declare the nature of his distress, and expect every assistance to which he was entitled by the sacred duties of humanity.

Encouraged by these words, the youth raised his head, and fixing his eyes upon my master, with

with a look inexpreſſibly ſupplicating, "Oh! ſtop "your fire, gracious Chief!" (ſaid he, preſſing his lips paſſionately to the hand that had raiſed him, and on which he ſtill hung) "ſtop your "fire in that fatal direction, where it can hurt "only innocence and virtue. That building, "againſt which it is levelled is not a part of "the fortifications, the deſtruction of which can "be of any ſervice to you. It is a convent de-"dicated to the *Virgin Mother of God*, and at "this time contains all that my ſoul holds "dear, all that is beautiful and virtuous under "heaven."

Though his youth, beauty, and diſtreſs intereſted every one preſent in the ſuppliant's favour, the nature of his ſuit muſt neceſſarily have prevented its ſucceſs. But an accident ſaved him from the pain of being refuſed; the powder which was to ſerve the guns ſomehow catching fire, and deſtroying the greateſt part of the battery, in the very inſtant he ſpoke.

Not all the horrours of ſuch a ſcene could ſuppreſs the joy he felt at an event ſo favourable to his hopes. "Heaven has interfered! (exclamed "he in an extaſy.) Heaven has interfered to ſave "her; and man will not preſume to oppoſe its "pleaſure."

The enthuſiaſtick manner in which he ſaid this ſtruck my maſter. "Reſtrain your paſ-"ſions for a few moments (ſaid he) till I have "leiſure

" leiſure to attend more particularly to you;
" and then, if you can convince me of the truth
" of what you ſay, your requeſt ſhall be com-
" plied with. Far be it from me to hurt thoſe
" helpleſs votaries of religion. *Britons* ſeek
" other objects for their valour."——He then gave the neceſſary orders for repairing the battery, and, deſiring the youth to follow him, went on board his ſhip, where he treated him with every mark of politeneſs and compaſſion.

As ſoon as they had taken ſome refreſhment, my maſter made a ſign to every one elſe to retire, and then addreſſing himſelf to the youth in the moſt humane manner, deſired to know who he was, and what motives could have induced him to run into ſuch imminent danger, in order to prefer a ſuit, of the ſucceſs of which there was ſo little probability.

The youth for ſome moments hung down his head abaſhed, then with a ſigh that ſeemed to burſt his heart, " It is my duty, moſt generous
" Chief (ſaid he) to give you the information
" you require, however painful the taſk may be
" to me; eſpecially, as your condeſcending to
" liſten to the ſtory of my misfortunes awakes
" a hope, that you will be moved by them to
" grant a requeſt on which depends my life.

" My name is *Alphonſo*. My father, *Don Pe-*
" *dro*, bears an honourable command in the
" forces which defend yonder city againſt your
" arms,

" arms, but glories more in the honour of being " deſcended from the noble family of *Guzman*, " which has preſerved its blood pure from every " debaſing mixture, ſince the beginning of time, " in the mountains of *Caſtile*, and produced a " race of heroes, whoſe fame has filled the " world.

" When my father arrived at an age fit to " bear arms, as none of the powers of *Europe* " dared to provoke the wrath of *Spain*, diſdain- " ing a life of inglorious peace, he entered into " the forces ſent hither to reduce ſuch of the re- " bellious natives as ſtill preſumed to refuſe " ſubmiſſion to the monarch of the *Spaniſh* " worlds, where he ſignaliſed himſelf ſo emi- " nently, that at the end of ſeven years his me- " rits were rewarded with a commiſſion, ſigned " by the Viceroy himſelf, in the name of the " King.

" Such a diſtinguiſhed honour gave weight to " the addreſſes which he had for ſome time paid " to the only daughter of *Don Alonzo Garzias*, " who was a native of *Arragon*, and had been " ſent over by the King to fill the important " office of Secretary to the Receiver of his re- " venues.

" From this marriage, ſo honourable to both " parties, I have the happineſs to derive my " birth, if it can be called an happineſs to be " born only to misfortunes.

" As

" As I was the ſole hope of two ſuch illuſtrious " houſes, no pains were ſpared to give me an " education ſuitable to my birth; the great ex- " ploits of my anceſtors, the antiquity and un- " tainted nobility of my blood, were continual- " ly repeated to me, to excite emulation, and in- " ſpire me with proper ſentiments of honour. " Such care ſeemed the ſureſt means to procure " happineſs, but the wiſdom of man ſtrives in " vain againſt the decrees of fate.

" In the neighbourhood of my father's houſe " there lived a merchant, named *Don Antonio*, " between whoſe family and our's there was the " cloſeſt intimacy—an intimacy mutually ad- " vantageous; the countenance of a perſon of " my father's conſequence being an honour to " his friend, who never omitted thoſe returns of " gratitude, which his wealth often gave him " an opportunity of making.

" *Don Antonio* had an only daughter, whoſe " being heireſs to his great fortune was the " leaſt bleſſing Heaven had beſtowed upon her! " O! my *Olivia*, ſhall I ever behold you more? " May I yet raiſe my hopes ſo high as to think " of calling you mine?"——

At theſe words a flood of tears choaking his utterance, my maſter took the opportunity to go out, and give ſome orders to his officers; and on his return the youth proceeded.

" *Don Antonio*'s daughter and I being nearly " of the ſame age, the tender connection of

" infant

" infant fondneſs grew up between us, and im-
" proved with our ripening years. The atten-
" tion of my father was too much engroſſed by
" his military cares to take notice of our at-
" tachment, and my mother was ſo ſenſible
" of the many perfections of *Olivia*, that, far
" from diſcouraging, ſhe promoted it by every
" means in her power, dwelling continually on
" her praiſes, and ſuggeſting to me ſuch little
" offices of affection and reſpect as were ſuited
" to our ages, and moſt likely to make an im-
" preſſion on her tender heart.

" Nor did the father of *Olivia* (ſhe had loſt
" her mother in her infancy) ſhow any diſ-
" ſatisfaction at a paſſion which could not eſcape
" his notice; influenced moſt probably by a ſenſe
" of the honour which he ſhould derive from
" ſuch an alliance."

" In this happy ſtate we lived till I entered on
" my fifteenth year, when my father thought it
" proper for me to learn the art of war, in order
" to qualify me for ſuch military promotions as
" I was entitled to by my birth, and for that
" purpoſe gave me notice to prepare myſelf to
" march with ſome troops, which were going
" to re-enforce a garriſon in the moſt diſtant
" part of the kingdom.

" Though my heart glowed with all the am-
" bition and deſire of glory which my noble
" blood muſt naturally inſpire, the thought of

" being ſeparated from *Olivia* overbalanced every " other conſideration. In the firſt emotions " of my ſoul, therefore, I threw myſelf at " my father's feet, and raſhly owned my paſ- " ſion, imploring him, as he regarded my life, " to make me happy in the poſſeſſion of my " love, before he attempted parting us, even for " a moment.

" It is impoſſible to deſcribe his rage on this " unhappy diſcovery. Spurning me from him " with his foot, 'Degenerate wretch! (ſaid " he, when his wrath permitted him to ſpeak) " Degenerate wretch! to ſtain the honour of " your blood, by thinking of an alliance with " the daughter of a perſon of whoſe family you " have no knowledge!'——(For, in all the in- " tercourſe of intimacy, the father of *Olivia* " had never diſcovered in what part of *Spain* " he had been born; nor could the recital " of illuſtrious pedigrees, the conſtant topick " of diſcourſe among the noble, ever incite him " to an emulative mention of his own.)—— " Hence! Fly my ſight this moment; nor " ever preſume to appear before me again, " till you have conquered this diſgraceful paſ- " ſion.'——

" I knew the inflexibility of my father's " temper too well to attempt making any re- " ply, even would the fullneſs of my heart " have permitted me. I retired, therefore,

" without

" without ſpeaking a word, and going to my " mother, informed her of my diſtreſs, which " ſhe ſtrove to alleviate by every expreſſion of " tenderneſs and conſolation, promiſing to exert " all her influence, as ſoon as the firſt heat of " his wrath ſhould be allayed, to prevail upon " him to conſent to my ſuit.

CHAP. X.

Continued. OLIVIA's *father is taken up by the Inquiſition, and herſelf put into a convent, on an* ENGLISH *battery's firing upon which* DON ALPHONSO *comes in deſpair to* CHRYSAL's *maſter to make a very odd requeſt, which he grants at length, and alſo promiſes him his aſſiſtance to obtain his miſtreſs.*

" THOUGH I received ſome encouragement from theſe aſſurances, I could not " forbear going, in the boding of my heart, to " acquaint *Olivia* with what had happened, but " in the moſt delicate terms. Her affliction was " not leſs than mine. She ſaw the ſincerity of " my love, and in the tenderneſs of ſuch a " ſcene yielded to my entreaties, and plighted " her faith to me by the moſt ſacred vows.

" Comforted by the thought that ſhe could " not now be torn from me, I returned home, " where I found my mother fulfilling her pro- " miſe, and pleading with my father in my be- " half. As their earneſtneſs made them ſpeak " aloud, I could not reſiſt the natural deſire of " liſtening to a debate of ſuch importance to " my hopes. She urged, with all the ſtrength " of reaſon, the abſurdity of thinking a family " diſhonoured by the admiſſion of a female, and " enforced her arguments with the examples

" even

" even of Sovereigns: ſhe inſiſted on the beauty, " virtues, and fortune of *Olivia*, which made " her worthy of the moſt honourable alliance; " and concluded with ſaying, how much better " it would be for us all to have me married to a " perſon whoſe wealth would enable us to ſpend " the remainder of our lives in plenty and hap- " pineſs, than to continue ſtruggling with every " miſery of poverty, merely to indulge a falſe, " ill-grounded pride.

" My father had liſtened to the former part of " what ſhe ſaid with an appearance of atten- " tion; but the moment ſhe mentioned his " poverty he loſt all patience. 'Forbear, ' mean, mercenary woman!' (ſaid he, ſtamp- " ing his foot upon the ground with a violence " that ſhook the houſe) 'forbear to tempt my ' wrath by ſuch baſe inſinuations. Did ever ' a *Caſtilian* think poverty an hardſhip, or put ' riches in competition with his honour? Such ' ſentiments may ſuit an *Arragonian*, but are ' beneath me. I ſee the ſource of the wretch's ' degeneracy! My blood never could have ' ſtooped to ſuch meanneſs, had it not been ' mixed with your's.'——

" Saying this, he flung out of the room, and " finding me at the door, 'Mark me, thou ' diſgrace to my blood!' (ſaid he, with a look " that appalled my ſoul) 'If ever I hear more ' of this affair, I ſwear by the offended honour ' of all my anceſtors to ſacrifice every one con-

'cerned in my being offered ſuch an af-
'front.'——

"What I felt on hearing this dreadful denun-
"ciation may be eaſily conceived. I ſwooned
"away, nor recovered my ſenſes till ſeveral
"hours after, when I found my mother weep-
"ing over me, in the bitterneſs of reſentment
"and grief.

"As ſoon as ſhe perceived that I was come
"to myſelf, ſhe ſtrove to comfort me by re-
"repeating her former promiſes, to the accom-
"pliſhment of which ſhe was now further im-
"pelled by her reſentment of the reflexions
"which my father had thrown upon her coun-
"try.

"But an unforeſeen misfortune blaſted all our
"hopes before ſhe had time to make another
"effort.

"The father of *Olivia* having had occaſion to
"go to *England* on ſome affairs in the courſe of
"his extenſive dealings, was ſo taken with the
"people of that country, that, after his return,
"he never omitted any opportunity of vindi-
"cating them from the injurious aſperſions of
"thoſe who ſpoke only from prejudice, and
"without proper information.

"This attachment naturally raiſed the jea-
"louſy of the clergy; but as he confined his
"approbation merely to their moral and ſocial
"virtues, without ever ſaying a word in vin-
"dication of their religious tenets, they con-

"tented

" tented themſelves with cautioning him againſt " miſplacing his praiſe, and telling him, that " *there could be no virtue where the true faith was* " *not; and therefore thoſe actions, with which he* " *was dazzled, were no more than ſhining ſins:* " and they were thus mild in their reprehen- " ſion, as he was remarkably punctual in the " profeſſion and practice of all the rites and doc- " trines preſcribed by the holy church.

" But this lenity laſted not long. On the " breaking out of the preſent war with *England*, " ſome perſons, who envied the ſucceſs with " which his honeſt induſtry had been re- " warded, raiſed a ſuſpicion in the Governor of " his holding an improper correſpondence with " the enemy, to which his former regard for " them ſeemed to give an appearance of proba- " bility.

" Bold in conſcious innocence, he denied the " charge, nor could the ſtricteſt enquiry pro- " cure the leaſt proof of it: But in the courſe " of their ſearch a diſcovery was unhappily made " that involved him in ruin, if poſſible, more " dreadful: a number of books, containing opi- " nions contrary to the Catholick faith, being " found in his poſſeſſion, concealed among ſome " of his goods.

" In vain did he alledge that they belonged " not to, nor could poſſibly have been known " of by him, the goods among which they had " been concealed having been landed but a few

" days before out of an *Engliſh* ſhip, which had " been taken by a *Spaniſh* man of war, in her " paſſage to one of their own colonies, where ſuch " books were openly allowed of, and ſold to him " unopened, as they ſtill remained.

" But, evident as the truth of this was, *the* " *Holy Office*, to whoſe juriſdiction the affair " belonged, would not admit of any ſuch ex- " cuſe. They inſtantly ſeiſed the unhappy " man, and hurrying him away to their own " priſon, took poſſeſſion of all his wealth, and " forced his helpleſs daughter into yonder con- " vent.

" This misfortune, which deprived me of the " wretch's pooreſt conſolation, the liberty of " complaining, drove me to deſpair. I pined " in ſilence; and was beginning to meditate on " laying down a life that was become a burthen " to me, when my father calling me to him " one morning 'The time is come!' (ſaid he, ' ſmiling fiercely) that will prove the blood ' of *Guzman*. The evil genius of the *Engliſh* ' has prompted them to come, and ſeek their ' deaths here. The moſt noble Governor has ' not only promoted me this day to the com- ' mand of a company in the forces deſtined for ' the defenſe of this city, but alſo, in reſpect ' to my family, has appointed you to be my ' lieutenant. Let this arouſe you to a ſenſe of- ' yourſelf! Conſider what you owe to your ' country, and to your name! Every feebler ' paſſion flies at the manly voice of war.'

" Languid

" Languid as my ſoul was, I could not hear " this news without joy, eſpecially as it opened " me a proſpect of meeting honourably that " death, which was now my only hope. Ac- " cordingly, as ſoon as the enemy appeared, I " courted danger with ſuch eagerneſs, that my " father, in ſpite of all his magnanimity, more " than once deſired me to reſtrain a courage that " aroſe to an exceſs.

" But even death itſelf is deaf to the wretch's " call. Nothing material happened to me, till " the battery, to which I came to you, opened " upon the convent, when the thought of my " *Olivia*'s danger of being buried in its ruins " drove me to madneſs. I inſtantly flew thi- " ther, and, imagining that ſuch circumſtances " bore down all regard to rules calculated for " times of peace, demanded entrance to convey " the inhabitants to ſome place of ſafety: but " what was my aſtoniſhment to hear the Gover- " nor had given the ſtricteſt orders, that not a " ſoul ſhould be admitted to ſtir, committing " to the immediate hand of Heaven the protec- " tion of its peculiar votaries.

" Such inhumanity, for I can call it by no " milder name, broke every bond of duty and " allegiance. I abjured all further connexion " with ſo cruelly inſenſible a monſter; and re- " collecting the many exalted inſtances of gene- " roſity which the unhappy father of *Olivia* had " told me of the *Engliſh*, I reſolved to apply

" myſelf to them, and try whether I could not " obtain that ſafety for the beloved of my ſoul, " which I could not hope from him whoſe duty " it was to protect her.

" This, moſt illuſtrious Chief, is the ſtory of " my misfortunes; the cauſe of that conduct " which appeared ſo ſtrange to you. If you " grant my ſuit, you will be amply rewarded by " the conſcious approbation of your own mind. " You will merit the bleſſing of Heaven on " your undertakings, by ſparing the moſt per- " fect of its works! And may I preſume to " add! you will attach to you an heart that " is incapable of deceit! Through every viciſ- " ſitude of life will I attend your ſteps, the faith- " ful ſervant of your fate."

The brightneſs of truth breaks through every cloud, and forces conviction. " I grant your " requeſt (ſaid my maſter, with a ſmile of con- " ſolation and encouragement) the convent ſhall " be ſpared. Nor is that all. If ſucceſs crowns " my hopes, I will alſo uſe every means in my " power to reſtore your *Olivia* to your arms."

CHAP. XI.

The fortunate effect of CHRYSAL's *maſter's ſparing the convent. The mutual advantages to victors and vanquiſhed of articles of capitulation.* CHRYSAL's *maſter performs his promiſe to* ALPHONSO, *into whoſe ſervice* CHRYSAL *enters.* ALPHONSO *recovers his miſtreſs, whoſe father is ſet at liberty by a piece of* FUN *of ſome* ENGLISH *ſailors. Concluſion of the ſtory of* ALPHONSO. CHRYSAL *changes his ſervice.*

ACCORDING to his promiſe, the next night, when the battery was repaired, my maſter gave orders to direct the fire another way, where he ſoon found the reward of his generoſity, one of the firſt bombs which was thrown ſetting fire to the principal magazine in the whole city, the blowing up of which overturned a conſiderable part of the fortifications.

Animated by this ſucceſs to a degree of phrenſy, the beſiegers puſhed on their attacks with ſuch irreſiſtible fury, that, *in ſpite of the accumulated havock of war, diſeaſe, and want*, they at length overcame the obſtinacy of the beſieged, and compelled them to capitulate on terms which were readily agreed to on both ſides, *as they ſaved the plunder from the ſoldiers, for the victorious commanders*; at the ſame time that they protected

the perſons of the vanquiſhed from licentious outrage.

There is no inſtance in which the cuſtoms of mankind are more changed than this. Formerly, when nations waged war, every thing the victorious ſoldier could lay hold on was his own, the perſons as well as the property of the vanquiſhed; and this more eſpecially at the taking of a town, which was the harveſt of his hopes. The exceſſes committed on theſe occaſions moſt certainly required a remedy; but it were well if that remedy, as in other caſes, had not been abuſed; and the care of reſtraining the exceſs of the common ſoldiers made a pretext for depriving them of the reward of all their toils and dangers, to enrich their Commanders.

The injuſtice of making ſlaves of the people, for the ambition or avarice of their Prince, is ſo flagrant, that the practice has been univerſally diſcontinued among civilized nations, who alſo affect to ſhow moderation in ſtripping them of their property, particularly in this inſtance of towns taken by capitulation. But at whoſe expenſe is this moderation? Why, at that of the inferior officers and ſoldiers, who receive a pittance of their own earnings that only inſults their neceſſities, while the bulk is ſhared between their ſuperiors. The injuſtice of this is evident. Either all ſuch *compoſition* ſhould be aboliſhed entirely, and the properties as well as liberty of the

the vanquiſhed be preſerved to them, or the prize be more equitably divided with thoſe from whom the plunder is taken, who ſtruggle with diſtreſs, and brave death for a morſel of bread, without any more hope of mending their condition even by ſucceſs, than the ox has of eating the corn for which he labours to plow the ground: and this loſs of hope is the reaſon why ſoldiers are not animated with the ſame ardour now as in former days.

But, grating as ſo flagrant a partiality muſt be to a generous mind, there is one circumſtance, not obvious perhaps to you, that aggravates the pain of it ſtill higher: this is, the neceſſity which the ſufferers are under of ſubmitting to *the inſolence and extortions of a ſet of Clerks and Agents* who fatten on their ſpoils, without even pretending to any merit in the acquiſition: a reflexion that exaſperates them againſt their commanders, by whoſe favour thoſe wretches are introduced and ſupported, and on whom they father all their villanies.

Much as the cares of his ſituation engroſſed the attention of my maſter, he did not forget his promiſe to the *Spaniſh* youth, but, ordering him a guard of ſoldiers, bade him go, as ſoon as the gates ſhould be delivered up, and ſecure the convent where his *Olivia* was confined from any accident which might happen on ſuch an occaſion in ſpite of all their care, giving him at the ſame time a purſe of gold, *in which I was*, to anſwer

anſwer any preſent neceſſities, with directions to apply to him again, if he ſhould have any further need of his aſſiſtance.

My new maſter did not want to have ſuch a commiſſion repeated. He kiſſed the hand of his benefactor in a rapture of gratitude, and encouraging the guard aſſigned him with the moſt liberal promiſes, flew, the moment the gates of the city were opened, to the convent, and demanded his *Olivia* with the peremptory voice of a conqueror, where the ſight of the guard removed every objection, and ſhe was inſtantly delivered to him.

The meeting of theſe young lovers was moſt affecting. They flew into each other's arms, and embracing in extaſy too big for utterance, gave vent to the fullneſs of their hearts by a flood of tears.

Recovering himſelf at length, "Come, my "*Olivia* (ſaid *Alphonſo*, taking her hand) let us "leave this place. Let us go"——

"O whither (interrupted ſhe, ſtarting wildly) "whither ſhall I go? I have no home——no "father to receive me."——

"My home is your's (anſwered *Alphonſo*, em- "bracing her moſt tenderly) we will go to the "houſe of my father, who cannot perſiſt in his "cruelty, when he is informed how ſignally "Heaven has interfered in our favour, and there "we will conſult on the means proper for pro- "curing the deliverance of *Antonio*. I have a

"protector

" protector among the conquerors, the moſt ge-
" nerous of mankind, who will not refuſe his
" aſſiſtance on ſuch an occaſion."

Theſe words comforted *Olivia* with an hope, for the accompliſhment of which thought ſhe was indebted to another cauſe.

The way from the convent to the houſe of *Alphonſo*'s father leading them by the priſon of the Inquiſition, *Olivia* was ſo affected at the ſight of it, that ſhe ſwooned away in the arms of *Alphonſo*. Such an accident naturally threw the whole company into an embarraſſment; while they were in the midſt of which, a body of *Engliſh* ſeamen, who had ſlipped away from their officers, and were roving about merely from curioſity, and without intention of doing miſchief, but ready to join in any that ſhould fall in their way, happening to come by, no ſooner underſtood from the guard what was the matter, than looking at each other for ſome moments, as if waiting for the word of command, at length one of them cried out, " Halloo, boys! What
" ſay you? Shall we bail the gentlewoman's
" father? May-hap there may be ſome of our
" countrymen in the bilboes along with him!
" Damn my eyes and limbs, but it would be
" good *fun* to ſet them all free! I fancy the
" quiſitors will not refuſe our bail; if they do
" I ſhould be glad to pick a quarrel with them:
" I hate them mortally ever ſince I ſaw them
" roaſt ſome poor *Smouches* at *Liſbon* becauſe
" they

" they would not eat pork. Come! chear away, " my hearts of oak! All hands aloft, and to " work."

Theſe words were like fire given to a mine. He had ſcarce finiſhed, when the thoughtleſs creatures without more ado ran to the priſon, and, while ſome of them were forcing in the gates, the reſt, mounting on each other's ſhoulders, climbed over the walls.

The moment *Olivia*, now recovered from her ſwoon, ſaw the priſon open, " Now is the time, " *Alphonſo!* (ſaid ſhe.) Now is the time to ſet " my father free."——

The hint was ſufficient. *Alphonſo* turned directly to the guard, and perceiving by their looks that they were willing to aſſiſt him, " I go, my " love! (ſaid he.) But where ſhall I leave you " in ſafety till I return? Such a place cannot " be fit for your delicacy."——

" Speak not of leaving me! (interrupted ſhe " eagerly.) I will go with you! No delicacy " ſhall interfere with ſuch a duty."——

On her ſaying this, they all entered the priſon, where the ſeamen were ſhouting, and ſkipping about like ſo many wild creatures, and ſetting all the priſoners at liberty, wherever they went.

The ſecrets of this priſon-houſe are too horrid for deſcription. I ſhall, therefore, draw a veil over them at this time, eſpecially as another occaſion will lead me into the ſame ſcenes again, when

when the repreſentation will be more intereſting.

No words can convey an idea of the tenderneſs of the meeting between *Olivia* and her father, whom *Alphonſo* and ſhe readily found out. As ſoon as they had indulged the firſt tranſports of their joy, ſhe informed him briefly how much they were both indebted to *Alponſo* for their preſent happineſs. Though her father was not at a loſs for the motive of ſuch generoſity, he thought it not proper to take notice of it at that time. He embraced him tenderly, and beſought Heaven to reward his virtues.

"The happineſs of ſerving thoſe moſt dear "to us (ſaid *Alphonſo*, who had not the ſame "command of his temper) is its own reward. "*Olivia* and her father have a right to every "thing in my power. But, let us leave this "place, the ſight of which appals my ſoul. Let "us go to the houſe of my father."——

"Lead on, my children! (anſwered *Olivia*'s "father) I follow willingly; and not without "hope of reconciling my friend to our general "happineſs."

When they went out of the priſon, they found the ſailors employed in executing a piece of juſtice exactly in their character. They had rambled all through the priſon, without doing or deſigning miſchief, till they came to the chamber in which were kept the inſtruments of torture, the ſight of which incenſed them to ſuch a degree

gree, that they inſtantly reſolved to make the Inquiſitors themſelves feel the force of them in their turn; but they, apprehenſive of what might happen, had prudently made their eſcape by a ſecret paſſage, as ſoon as the priſon had been forced. Diſappointed thus in their deſign, the ſailors took all the horrid apparatus, with the habits, enſigns, books, &c. of the office, and piling them up in the court, ſet fire to the heap, concluding the exploit with three cheers for the honour of Old *England*; after which they marched off in queſt of more *fun*, as unconcerned as if nothing had happened.

When *Alphonſo* arrived at his father's houſe, he found his mother juſt ſinking under the weight of affliction. On hearing his voice, ſhe ſtarted up, and running to him, "O my ſon! my "ſon! (exclaimed ſhe, claſping him in her "arms, and leaning her head upon his boſom.) "Heaven has heard my prayers! I am not "childleſs, though I am a widow!"——"A "widow! (exclaimed *Alphonſo.*) Forbid it, Hea-"ven! O my father!"——

"Yes, *Alphonſo!*" (continued ſhe, raiſing her head from his boſom, which ſhe had bedewed with her tears) "Your father died, as he lived, "with honour, fighting valiantly by the ſide of "his General, in defenſe of his country. But, "what do I ſee?" (caſting her eyes upon *Olivia*, her father, and the guard, whom her ſurpriſe had prevented her taking notice of before) "*Olivia!*

" *Olivia! Antonio!*—And who are theſe ſtrange " men?—But, alas, I know too well!—O! " my ſon, art thou then a priſoner to the ene- " mies who ſlew thy father!—Am I to loſe " thee again, the moment thou art returned?"—

" No, my mother! (anſwered he) I am no " priſoner! They are our protectors, given by " the moſt generous of men, who has thus re- " ſtored us to each other! O! that my father " were alive, to make our happineſs com- " plete."——

" Since Heaven has appointed otherwiſe," (ſaid *Antonio*, going up to *Alphonſo*'s mother, who was weeping with *Olivia*, on whoſe neck ſhe had fallen) " it is our duty to ſubmit to its " pleaſure. The circumſtances of our lives " make it improper for us to think of living " any longer here. But that ſhould not diſ- " courage us. The virtuous find an home every " where! We will remove to the dominions of " the *Engliſh*, where I have lodged in honeſt " hands fortune ſufficient to make our retreat " happy. Under the protection of their laws, " a man's mind is at liberty, and his wealth is " ſecure. Mine was my only crime here; but " I was aware of ſuch an attack, and had re- " moved it beyond the reach of thoſe who im- " piouſly made religion the pretext for depriving " me of it. Were my friend *Don Pedro* living, " I would have removed the objections which " his high notions of honour made to an alli-

" ance

"ance with my family, and prevailed upon him "to accompany us." * Theſe words comforted the mother of *Alphonſo*, and made the lovers happy.

Every thing being thus ſettled, the guard was diſmiſſed with profeſſions of the higheſt gratitude to the generous Chief, which *Antonio* and *Alphonſo* propoſed waiting on him to pay in perſon, as ſoon as he ſhould be more at leiſure; and to reward the ſoldiers for their attendance, *Alphonſo* gave them the purſe of gold he had received from his benefactor, and *in which I was;* in the diviſion of which I fell to the lot of the ſerjeant who commanded them, who, looking upon me as an earneſt of the vaſt treaſures he was to receive as his ſhare of the ſpoil, went away with an happy heart, to join his fellows, who were now in full poſſeſſion of the city.

* The ſtory of *Antonio* followed here, but was ſo blotted and imperfect in the M. S. that the Editor was obliged to omit it.

CHAP. XII.

CHRYSAL makes ſome ſtriking remarks on a ſtate of abſolute liberty. Diſappointment of the hopes of the conquerours, with the natural conſequences. CHRYSAL'S *maſter going to take a taſte of the pleaſures of affluence, is flammed out of his treaſure by a ſutler, into whoſe ſervice* CHRYSAL *enters.*

THE conduct of man in ſuch ſcenes as this, where he thinks himſelf at liberty to follow the inſtantaneous impulſe of his own will, without apprehenſion of immediate puniſhment, ſhows the groundleſs vanity of thoſe, who boaſt ſo loudly of the excellency of his nature, and deny the neceſſity of coercive laws.

It is true, no people ever abuſed this liberty leſs than the *Engliſh*, who ſcorn to inflict upon others that oppreſſion from which their laws protect themſelves; as, on the other hand, ſlaves, on a change of fortune, always prove the moſt imperious tyrants; but ſtill the circumſtances attending even the moſt moderate exertion of it are too ſhocking for diſpaſſionate deſcription, wherefore I ſhall wave the painful taſk.

As ſoon as ſome degree of order was eſtabliſhed in the city, the victorious commanders proceeded to divide the ſpoil, *a work for which they all ſhowed their capacity in the moſt remarkable manner,*

manner, the pittance which they thought proper to appoint for the ſhare of each of the private men, who had literally bor'n the heat and burthen of the day being a trifle beneath the acceptance of any but a beggar who wanted a morſel of bread, and not *the fifty-thouſandth part* of what the chief commanders, who comparatively had lived in luxury, and iſſued their orders from places of ſafety, modeſtly owned to have reſerved for each of themſelves.

Nor was the caſe of the inferiour officers, who executed thoſe orders, any better, their ſhares not being ſufficient to defray the extraordinary expenſes which they had been at, to provide for the enterpriſe, much leſs the extraordinary expenſe of living, where the indiſpenſible neceſſaries of life were ſubject to the moſt exorbitant impoſitions of an avaricious and arbitrary will; ſo that all they gained by their conqueſt was to exchange the dangers of war for the miſeries of want.

This diſappointment of the hopes which alone had ſupported their ſpirits through hardſhips almoſt beyond the power of nature to ſupport filled up the black liſt of the calamities which attended this enterpriſe, aggravating by deſpair the diſeaſes to which the climate ſubjected the victors to ſuch a degree, that their loſs, after their conqueſt, exceeded many times that which they had ſuffered in the ſiege from ſo many combined cauſes.

To

To the truth of this repreſentation, which to unexperienced ſpeculation may appear too ſeverely drawn, the wretched remains of the conquering army which returned to their exhauſted country bore a melancholy teſtimony. —But to quit theſe diſagreeable reflections!

Such a treaſure as I was (greater much than he had ever been poſſeſſed of before!) raiſed the ſpirits of my maſter, the ſerjeant, ſo high, that he went directly to a ſutler's tent, to take a taſte of the good living which he thought himſelf ſecure of for the remainder of his days.

On his entering the tent, and aſking what entertainment he could have, the ſutler, ignorant of his wealth, anſwered with a curſe, that he had none for ſuch ſhabby fellows as him, and took him by the ſhoulder to thruſt him out. Provoked at ſuch an indignity to a perſon of his preſent conſequence, my maſter turned upon him, and pulling *me* out of his pocket, demanded haughtily, why he might not have what he would pay for, as well as another.

The ſight of the gold inſtantly changed the ſutler's whole behaviour. "My worthy friend!" (ſaid he, ſhaking the ſerjeant by the hand.) "I "beg your pardon. I actually did not perceive "whom I ſpoke to, I am ſo hurried about. "But, come along with me, and I'll make you "amends. I have a nice leg of a fowl which "was beſpoke for your colonel; but *firſt come "firſt ſerved*, as the ſaying is, ſo here it is for "you;

" you; and here is a bottle of wine, as cool as if " it came but this minute from *Iceland*."

My maſter was not proof againſt ſuch an invitation. He *fell to*, without more ceremony, and when he had finiſhed his feaſt, calling to know what was to pay, the ſutler anſwered, Two doubloons.

" Two doubloons!—Two devils!" (ſaid the ſerjeant, ſtaring at ſuch a demand) " for a leg " of an old hen, as black as Hell, and lean as " *Belzebub*; and a bottle of rot-gut ſour cyder! " No, no, friend! no ſuch tricks for me. I am " not to be *flammed* ſo neither."

" Why there it is now!" (anſwered the ſutler, not much pleaſed with my maſter's looks.) " The moment a man grows rich, he grows " covetous." I received the ſame for the other " leg of that very fowl, this moment, from an " enſign, who by the ſame token left his laced " waiſtcoat in pawn for half the money. But " I will not fall out with you for ſuch a trifle, " as I expect more of your cuſtom; ſo e'en give " me what you pleaſe. You can't think one " doubloon too much, I am ſure! But you ſhall " make it up another time."

Such an argument could not be reſiſted. The ſerjeant threw me down upon the table with an air of grandeur, and went to conſider how he ſhould lay out to the beſt advantage, the treaſures which he expected immediately to receive.

CHAP.

CHAP. XIII.

Character of CHRYSAL's *new maſter. The right way not to ſuffer by making miſtakes. A curious converſation between* CHRYSAL's *maſter and two perſons of conſequence lays open the ſecrets of ſome intereſting affairs. He makes up a fooliſh diſpute by a ſenſible toaſt.*

I WAS now entered into a ſervice, which opened to me ſo many various views of human folly, vice, and wretchedneſs, as made the proſpect painful.

The manner in which my new maſter got me into his poſſeſſion ſhowed his character in a light ſufficiently ſtrong. But I ſoon had the ſatisfaction of ſeeing that, with all his addreſs at impoſition, he was himſelf no more than the tool of the impoſitions of his ſuperiours, who ſcarce left him the pooreſt gleanings to pick up, after all the plenteous harveſt: The juſt and conſtant fate of all ſuch wretches.

The continual hurry in which he was engaged, though he had falſely alledged it as an excuſe for the treatment of my late maſter, the ſerjeant, was really ſufficient to excuſe any inadvertency or blunder, and muſt have cauſed many in any one, whoſe ideas were not ſettled in one

certain courſe, out of which it was impoſſible to divert them. But I ſoon found, that he was in no danger of that kind, all his thoughts having ſuch an invariable biaſs to his own intereſt, that every miſtake naturally fell to that ſide, for which upon detection his hurry was a ready and probable excuſe.

The ſerjeant had ſcarce left him, when two perſons entered, whom he received with every mark of the moſt obſequious ceremony and reſpect. One of them I directly knew to be my old maſter, the Admiral's clerk, as I ſoon found the other to be in the ſame important ſtation with the General.

My maſter, who was not at a loſs for the occaſion of their viſit, led them into the moſt private place in the tent, and ſetting before them a bottle of *his beſt*, proceeded to buſineſs. "Mr. *Admiral*, to your good health! Mr. *Ge-*"*neral*, my very hearty ſervice to you!" (ſaid he, filling a brimmer, and addreſſing each, by the title of his maſter, as he ſhook them by the hand.) "Here is a good concluſion for the cam-"paign to us. I was impatient of your com-"ing to know how I ſhould go on. Here have "been ſeveral officers with me already, for "credit on the ſcore of their prize-money, for "the length of the ſiege, and the dearneſs of "every thing, has not left them a penny, nor "any thing to pawn for one. I have got as "many clothes, and things of all kinds, as

"would

" would ſerve to ſet up a *Monmouth-ſtreet* mer-
" chant. If the place had held out but a few
" days longer, the poor devils muſt have done
" duty in their *Buff*. Ha! ha! ha!"

" And the propereſt dreſs for them: (re-
" turned the *Admiral.*) Who wants any clothes
" in ſuch a climate as this? I am ſure, I go
" naked half my time, though I keep under
" cover, and have nothing to do to heat me."

" Very true! (anſwered my maſter.) " But
" naked and hungry both are not quite ſo well;
" and when their moveables were all gone after
" their money, I don't know who would have
" ſupplied them."

" Then let them live on their allowance?
" (ſaid the General.) They who can't afford
" to pay for better, ſhould be content with
" that."——

" To die upon it, you ſhould ſay;" (inter-
" rupted my maſter.) I am ſure the ſtores laid
" in are ſuch as no one can live upon, that has
" ever known what living was. For my part,
" I wonder the contractors were not aſhamed
" to ſupply ſuch wretched ſtuff of all kinds.
" They muſt have no conſcience at all who can
" do ſuch things."—

" Conſcience! ha! ha! ha! who ever
" heard a ſutler ſpeak of conſcience before!
" (ſaid the Admiral.) " And pray, my con-
" ſcientious friend, what do you charge a bottle
" forthis moſt excellent wine of your's?"——

"For this wine?" (anſwered my maſter, palating it two or three times.) "I charge for "this wine only *a piſtole*; and, let me tell you, "that is not ſo much, conſidering every "thing. This Burgundy coſt me five ſhillings "a bottle, prime coſt; and, when you compute "every expenſe, you'll find that my profit is "nothing extraordinary; nothing at all in com-"pariſon of what others get."

"No! to be ſure! (replied the General.) "Your conſcience won't ſuffer you to do as "they do! you are too good a man."—

"Too good a *Chriſtian*, you ſhould ſay; "(interrupted the Admiral;) as appears by your "*baptizing* your wine ſo piouſly! ha! ha! "ha! Pray, what did the water coſt, that is "mixed with this ſame Burgundy? I hope that "did not ſtand you in five ſhillings a bottle, "too. Ha! ha! ha!".—

"It is very well, gentlemen! (returned my "maſter, with a ſneer.) You are pleaſed to be "merry. But if I had not ſome way to make "out matters, I could never pay the exorbitant "taxes, which are ſqueeſed from me by ſome "people whom I ſhan't name. And ſo, here's "my ſervice to you both, once more! When "you lower *your compoſition*, I'll leſſen the "quantity of water, and mend mine. Ha! "ha! ha!"—

"And ſo you had need (ſaid the General) "to make it drinkable: As it is, I wonder it

"does

" does not poiſon every one that taſtes it. " When I lived at the *Shakeſpear*, we did not " give worſe than this to our company after " they were dead drunk!"

" Worſe than this! (added the Admiral.) " If you had given me half ſo bad, I ſhould " have broken your head with the bottle."

" Broken my head! (returned the General) " fine words truely! When you were a blue- " noſed journey-man Barber, and uſed to come " to me, to beg broken victuals, and bottoms of " bottles, you ſpoke in another tone."——

" And when I was Sir, (replied the Ad- " miral) I had a good trade, and never looked " upon myſelf as upon a level with the Pimp of " a tavern."——

" And yet that pimping made you what you " are now!" (retorted the General, riſing up in a paſſion.) " You forget, perhaps, how you " begged of me to introduce your ſiſter to the " Admiral, by which means you got into his " ſervice! this is a fine return, indeed."——

" And you forgot too" (ſaid the Admiral, ſtarting from his ſeat, and catching at the bottle) " that it was that ſame ſiſter of mine, " who got you into the General's ſervice, if " you go to that, ſo that I think the obligation " is equal."——

" Gentlemen! dear gentlemen!" (interrupted my maſter, clapping a hand to each of their collars.) " Conſider what you are doing! What

" will the world ſay of ſuch a quarrel between " gentlemen, who ought to agree like brothers. " For ſhame! every body will laugh at you! " Come, ſit down, and be good friends, and " I'll try if I have not one bottle of better " wine, over which we'll make up all mat- " ters."——Then bringing it, and filling his glaſs, " Come gentlemen," (continued he, ſhaking each of them by the hand) " I'll give " you a toaſt that ſhall drown all animoſity: " Here is proſperity to pimping! It is the beſt " trade going, and has made us all! Aye, and " is practiſed too by people in every ſtation, " however they may affect to turn up their noſes " at it. So let us attend to our buſineſs, and " not fall together by the ears for nothing, like " a parcel of dogs about a bare bone. It ſigni- " fies nothing what we have been; if we mind " our *hits* now, we ſhall all be gentlemen, as " good as the beſt of them; and as well reſpected, " too."

The Admiral and General ſaw the force of what he ſaid, and, pledging his toaſt, ſhook hands, and were as good friends as ever.

CHAP.

CHAP. XIV.

Continued. The myſteries of agency; and conve-nience of a military government, with ſome curious notions of the genteeleſt ways of riſing in life.

"WELL, gentlemen," (ſaid my maſter, who was not pleaſed at their jeſts upon his liquor, becauſe he could not deny the truth of them) "I hope that wine pleaſes you!"

"Aye! (anſwered the Admiral) this is "*the right ſort!* this is *the thing*. Give us this; "and keep the other for officers, and ſuch as "are not uſed to better."——

"And if it poiſons them (added the Admiral) the publick will have the fewer to pay. "Now they have done the buſineſs, let them "live or die as they can, we care not. That's "nothing to us."

"Very true! (ſaid my maſter.) All we "have to do, is to make the moſt of them while "they do live; and therefore I ſhould be glad to "know, as I ſaid before, how far I may ven-"ture to go with them, on the credit of their "prize-money; for, as the place was ſaved from "being plundered by the articles of capitulation, "they muſt all get money on their ſhares, whe-"ther they will or not, their neceſſities are "ſuch."

"So much the better for us, who can buy "their ſhares: (anſwered the Admiral.) They'll "give the better bargains. Their neceſſity is our "gain."——

"Aye! (replyed my maſter.) But I don't "find they intend ſelling. All they propoſe is, "to mortgage."——

"Then, let them ſee who'll give them mo- "ney: (ſaid the General.) No! no! no mort- "gages for us. An abſolute ſale or nothing. "We'll have no after-reckonings; no *over-* "*hauling* accounts. As to their being unwilling "to ſell, we'll manage that matter with them. "When you have got them ſufficiently in your "books, call for your money, and, as it will be "impoſſible for them to pay, apply to the com- "mander in chief, who will oblige them to do "you juſtice."

"Why! to be ſure, that muſt do! (anſwer- "ed my maſter.) But how far am I to truſt "them?"——

"This will ſhow you! (replied the Gene- "ral.) Here is the rate of all their ſhares. Look "at the ſum total. What noble fortunes that "would have made for half a dozen reaſonable "men. It went to my heart to *fritter* it away "among ſo many."——

"This! this the rate of their ſhares!" (ſaid my maſter, not able to conceal his aſtoniſhment, when he looked at the paper which the other gave

gave him.) "Is it poſſible that this ſhould be "all?"

"Yes! (returned the Admiral) and too "much for them, too. More than moſt of them "ever had before, or will make a good uſe of "now."——

"Why, they'll mutiny, and cut all our "throats (returned my maſter.) There are "ſeveral of them, who owe me almoſt as much "as this already. I thought they would have "had ten times this ſum at leaſt. They'll cer-"tainly mutiny, and cut all our throats."

"Don't you give yourſelf any trouble about "their mutinying! (ſaid the General.) Do you "mind your buſineſs, and leave us to take care "of that. Their ſpirits will hardly be ſo high! "If you have gone hand over head, and truſted "them ſo far, you muſt abide by the loſs. I "thought I gave you a friendly caution about "that before."

"And ſo (returned my maſter) I am not "to go beyond this rate, you ſay?"——

"Not a penny! (anſwered the Admiral.) "That is your rule. Whatever you can beat "them down of that ſhall be your own."

"That is, deducting five *per Cent.* agency! "(interpoſed the General) and five or ten *per* "*Cent*, as you can make your bargain, for "prompt-payment; for we will not appear to "have any hand in the affair, further than pay-"ing you the money. It muſt not be known "that we are concerned in the leaſt."——

"You concerned! (replied my maſter.) I "don't underſtand you. Are you to be concern-"ed with me, in what I buy?"

"Not in the leaſt (returned the Admiral;) "any further than by employing you to act for "us. You ſeem to miſtake the matter entirely. "You are to buy the ſhares for us, according to "this rate, for which we will allow you a proper "agency: and that is all the concern you are "to have in the affair."——

"But I ſuppoſe (ſaid my maſter) I may "buy on my own account, if I pleaſe!"——

"Buy on your own account! (interrupted "the General.) Such another word, and you "ſhall neither ſell nor buy any thing here. Are "not we the Commander's agents? And do you "think they will ſuffer us to be interloped up-"on? You may be very well content with the "profits of your own buſineſs, without thinking "to interfere in our's."

"I aſk your pardon, gentlemen!" (ſaid my maſter, who knew their power too well to diſ-pute with them.) "It was only a miſtake. I by "no means preſume to interfere with you; and "ſhall be proud to execute your orders, on "whatever terms you think proper. I ſuppoſe "though our former *compoſition* is to end. Pro-"viſions will now come in from every part, ſo "that we can never think of keeping them up at "their former prices."

"Can't

"Can't you ſo? (anſwered the General.) "That ſhall be your own fault then; and your "own loſs too, I can tell you. Let proviſions "come in as they will, no one ſhall ſell an "ounce here without our permiſſion, and that "ſhall be on our own terms, you may be aſſured. "Our hands are not tied up by laws. Our's is "a *military government*, in which we can do "what we pleaſe without being accountable to "any one. So you may go on as before."

"But, gentlemen (replied my maſter) you "ſhould conſider that the whole odium of this "will fall upon me, as you do not appear in it, "ſo that I ſhall loſe my character for ever."

"Your character! Ha! ha! ha! (in-"terrupted the General) a ſutler's character! "I ſhall never be able to bear the word again! "Pray, my good friend, what character had a ſut-"ler ever to loſe, that would not be a greater "loſs to the finder? Come, here's my ſervice "to you. Go on with your buſineſs, and make "money, and never fear ſuffering by the loſs "of your character. It is time for us to go, "and ſettle what taxes we ſhall lay upon the "different kinds of merchandiſe that ſhall "be brought here. *Our duties* ſhall be paid, "as well as thoſe of any king of them all. "This is our reign; and if we do not make "the moſt of it, we have no one to blame "but ourſelves."

" And as rich as ſo many kings you will be;
" (ſaid my maſter) if you can carry off things in
" the manner you ſay."——

" As to our being rich! (returned the Ad-
" miral) that depends entirely upon our own
" management. Our principals, indeed, will be
" rich enough, which is all they care for; not
" what becomes of us, whom they would
" have do their buſineſs for nothing, or next to
" it. But they ſhall find themſelves miſtaken.
" Every thing muſt go through our hands; and
" *gold in handling will ſtick to the fingers*, as the
" ſong ſays. We ſhall feather our neſts, in
" ſpite of them. They cannot do without us;
" and will hardly be fond of calling us to
" too ſtrict an account, for fear of our telling
" tales. To be ſure, the great harveſt will be
" their's; but we will take toll."

" I don't doubt but you will (ſaid my ma-
" ſter) twice over, for fear of miſtake, as the
" miller does. Why, you'll make ſuch fortunes,
" that you won't know what to do with your-
" ſelves."

" Never fear that! (anſwered the General.)
" We ſhall not be at a loſs. For my part, I de-
" ſign to buy a borough, and puſh my fortune
" in Parliament. That's the genteeleſt buſineſs
" a gentleman can follow now, and the readi-
" eſt way of advancing in life, and making a
" family."——

" Now,

"Now, I think otherwiſe (ſaid the Admiral;) "and that it is the moſt ungenteel way; ſuch "dirty jobs are required for every thing a man "gets, that it is beneath a gentleman to do "them. My ſcheme is to buy an *Iriſh Peerage* "at once, and then live ſplendidly, without "troubling myſelf about any thing. Or, if I "ſhould grow tired of idleneſs, go into Parlia- "ment there, and turn *Patriot*, and make "ſpeeches for the good of my country."

"Both your ſchemes may be very good! "(ſaid my maſter) but my ambition is not ſo "high as either, at leaſt as yet. I will try to "get a *Contract*; and then I ſhall not fear "making a fortune ſufficient to do what you "propoſe, or more if I chooſe it, without being "ſneered at for my folly. You may ſay what "you will, but there is more to be got by a "*contract*, than by every other way; and, there- "fore, it is the genteeleſt in my opinion. How "many *contractors* have I ſeen buy noblemen's "fine houſes, and members of Parliament's "eſtates, with the profits of a ſingle campaign! "And ſo, *My Lord*, and you, moſt honourable "*Mr. Member*, I am your humble ſervant."

"Honeſt *Mr. Contractor* (replied both at the "ſame time) Your's."

CHAP. XV.

Affecting conſequences of carrying the foregoing ſchemes into execution; with the concluſion of the character and hiſtory of CHRYSAL's *maſter.* CHRYSAL *changes his ſervice.*

AS ſoon as this worthy pair had left my maſter, he ſet about his buſineſs of preying upon the neceſſities of every one who came near him, with as much keenneſs as a vulture tears a carrion, and with as little feeling, or he could never have gone through with it.

The tranſactions I now ſaw are a pain to memory. For the few firſt days after their ſucceſs, the officers, under the ſame intoxication with my late maſter, the ſerjeant, gave a looſe to every kind of extravagance, to compenſate to themſelves for the wants and hardſhips they had ſuffered. But, no ſooner had they advanced near the limits preſcribed to their credit, than the whole ſcene changed.

The firſt mention of the amount of their reſpective ſhare was like a clap of thunder burſting over their heads. Their aſtoniſhment for ſome time deprived them of their ſenſes. But when they were able to make a proper enquiry, and found the caſe to be too true, their rage broke through all bounds, and roſe almoſt to deſperation. *The horrours of a jail, the cries of a ſtarving*

ſtarving family, every aggravation of human miſery ſtared them in the face, and made the very thought of returning to their native country too terrible to be endured. But there was no remedy. Thoſe, from whom alone it could proceed, were too much intereſted to liſten to their complaints; and, inſtead of preventing, permitted their authority to be proſtituted to complete their ruin, in the manner propoſed by their agents, ſo that the unhappy victims were forced to ſubmit to the terms impoſed upon them.

The conſequence of this, as I have ſaid before, was that, to drown reflexion, they ſpent whatever trifle remained to them on concluding the bargains which ſealed their ruin in ſtill greater exceſſes, and ſo precipitated the diſtreſs they feared.

As for the private men, the impoſitions they ſuffered were, if poſſible, ſtill ſeverer (though from their inſenſibility perhaps not ſo ſeverely felt) as the *management* of their affairs went through many more hands, every one of whom had a pull at them, down to the very loweſt claſs of the harpies which prey upon an army, ſo that what remained to them was too trifling to be of any ſervice, even to the very few who ſtruggled with their neceſſities in order to ſave it.

I have not entered minutely into the particulars of this horrid ſcene. This ſlight ſketch will give you a general notion of it, and that is as much as an humane heart can bear. Indeed, no deſcription

deſcription could reach the truth. I ſhall, therefore, only juſt finiſh the outlines of my maſter's character, and then paſs on to the occurrences in my next ſervice.

The extortions to which he was himſelf forced to ſubmit, from thoſe in authority, took off every ſhadow of ſhame (to conſcience he had long been a ſtranger) and added double keenneſs to his natural propenſity to extortion, by giving it what he thought the appearance of juſtice, and provoking him to wreak his reſentment upon others, for what he ſuffered himſelf from thoſe above his reach.

The opportunities for exerting his talents this way were infinite in a profeſſion that is a myſtery of iniquity too complicated to be unravelled, too black to be conceived, but upon experience, which he had acquired to the moſt conſummate degree, in the gradual progreſſion of his life.

A natural ſharpneſs of genius, which ought to have been curbed, not encouraged, had influenced his parents to bind him when very young to an attorney, under whom he learned, beſides other valuable qualifications, the nice diſtinctions between law and juſtice, ſo as to know critically how far he could infringe upon the latter, without danger of getting within the reach of the former: But, encouraged by much ſucceſs, he had at length unluckily happened to go too near thoſe boundaries, and been obliged to quit that profeſſion! after ſome common ſteps of

deſcent from which, ſuch as *bailiff's follower*, *knight of the poſt*, and *bully to a bawdy-houſe*, he ſtopped in that of footman to a beau, from which the neceſſary arts of *prevaricating*, *lying*, and *evading diſagreeable demands*, the qualifications of his former character, ſoon raiſed him to be his *gentleman*.

In this ſtation, he added to his ſtock of accompliſhments, natural and acquired, *pimping*, *ſervility*, *adulation*, and *an abſolute command of countenance*, on the ſtrength of all which, together with ſome little money, the fruits of his honeſt induſtry, on his maſter's fixing his habitation in a jail, he ſet up a tavern, where his *ſecond-hand politeneſs* and *cringing behaviour* ſoon brought him into buſineſs that enabled him to live better than he could have any right to have expected, and would in time have procured him an independence.

This ſucceſs, which would have ſatisfied a reaſonable perſon, only raiſed his ambition, and made him deſpiſe his buſineſs. Accordingly, he commenced *wine-merchant*, as more ſuitable to a *gentleman*, in which profeſſion he went on, *till his one-horſe chaiſe*, *his country houſe*, *and kept-miſtreſs* would have brought him back to his primitive poverty, had not his knowledge of the world taught him how to ſecrete from his creditors, ſomething to try his hand upon in ſome other way, when he pitched upon his preſent occupation of *a ſutler*, in which this account of his

his life ſhows he was moſt eminently fitted to make a figure.

Thus qualified in himſelf, and ſupported by his employers, he proceeded making his bargains, with a ſucceſs, to which it may be thought no regard to honeſty, no ſenſe of compaſſion, was the leaſt impediment. He flattered, profeſſed the higheſt reſpect and attachment, and preſſed his goods upon his deſtined victims, with every inſinuating art, till he got them into his ſnare, when he directly put on all the inſolence of power, and made even ruin ſtill more wretched by the cruelty with which he drove them to it, the inſenſibility with which he treated them after. How often have I ſeen him refuſe to truſt for a glaſs of what he called wine, to cool his raging thirſt, and comfort his fainting heart, the man whom but the day or two before he had cajoled into the exceſſes which drew him into that diſtreſs.

After ſome days of painful attention to ſuch ſhocking ſcenes, I had the pleaſure of being paid away to the captain of a merchant ſhip, for ſome liquors, which he had the addreſs to deceive the vigilance of the ruling powers, and all their emiſſaries, and convey *impoſt-free* to my maſter.

CHAP.

CHAP. XVI.

CHRYSAL's *maſter ſwallows a pill, and pleads an important cauſe without ſucceſs. A curious method of parrying one falſe oath by another, with the firſt oath taken by the maſter of a merchantman. He ſhows another inſtance of his ſkill in ſteering clear of perjury, but without his former ſucceſs. His notion of conſcience.* CHRYSAL *changes his ſervice.*

THE care which I knew to be taken to detect and puniſh this kind of *illicit* trade made me wonder at firſt that it ſhould even be attempted; but I ſoon found that the danger of ſuch detection when it depends ſolely on the confeſſion of thoſe concerned, however forceful the means made uſe of to extort that confeſſion, is held at naught by a ſet of people, bred in the groſſeſt ignorance of every principle of moral virtue, or religious obligation, and hardened by long habit into contempt of whatever claſhes with their intereſt.

When I came into the poſſeſſion of my new maſter, he was going to attend the two *great men*, whoſe converſation with the ſutler I have juſt now related, in obedience to a ſummons ſent him the moment he entered the harbour. The reception he met with was ſuited to their importance. He was obliged to wait a conſiderable

derable time, before they were at leiſure to ſee him, when being admitted to their preſence, and having delivered in his bill of lading, and *taken his oath*, that he had no *private trade* on board, nor any thing which was not contained in that account; they informed him what *duties* he muſt pay on every article, before he ſhould be permitted to land them.

My maſter, though he was ſufficiently appriſed of this before, affected ſurpriſe, and attempted to expoſtulate with them on the illegality and injuſtice of ſuch a demand, alledging that the goods had been purchaſed at the higheſt prices, in order to ſend a ſpeedy and effectual ſupply to the troops, who were known to want them, ſo that there could be no advance made upon them, which could defray ſuch additional duties; that his owners, not in the leaſt ſuſpecting any ſuch, had given him no power to pay them; and that many of the commodities, being of a periſhable nature, muſt be damaged if not permitted to be landed directly, by which means not only the merchants would be great loſers, but alſo the troops ſuffer ſeverely for the want of common neceſſaries, which they could not otherwiſe be ſupplied with.

But all he could ſay had no effect. They did not even deign to make him any anſwer, further than that they had authority for what they did, and expected obedience, not arguments, which they had not leiſure to liſten to.

Such

Such a repulſe, however unjuſt in itſelf, and perſonally offenſive in the manner of it, was far from giving my maſter any concern. On the contrary, the difficulties which it threw upon the buſineſs of his owners afforded him an opportunity of carrying on *his own private trade* to better advantage, which no oaths they could deviſe were able to put a ſtop to, as an inſtance or two of his conduct will ſhow.

Some ſuſpicion having ariſen of his commerce with the ſutler, of which no direct proof could be obtained, he was ſummoned to appear before the tax-gatherers, *to acquit himſelf by his oath* of ſo heinous an offenſe.

The ſutler, who knew the conſequence of being convicted, and with all his knowledge of the world ſaw no poſſibility of avoiding it, gave himſelf up as ruined: but my maſter ſoon ſhowed him the convenience of a conſcience trained to ſwearing, for calling upon him the morning they were to appear at the dread tribunal, and ſeeing him ſo caſt down, "Chear "up, brother (ſaid he.) I'll bring you ſafe "through this ſtrait! By the virtue and con- "tents of this book (pulling one out of his "pocket, and kiſſing it in form) I will never "ſwear that you have bought any thing from "me; ſo, throw off that ſneaking, *Tyburn* look, "and come along."

Such an aſſurance naturally gave the ſutler ſome ſpirits; though he could not conceive how he

he meant to make it good; but a little time cleared up the myſtery, and ſhowed him the force of a cuſtom-houſe oath.

As ſoon as the two culprits appeared before their judges, the latter, aſſuming all the dignity of their office, exaggerated the charge in the ſtrongeſt colours, and adminiſtering the oath to my maſter, demanded, in an authoritative tone, whether he had not ſold *uncuſtomed* goods to the ſutler, and to what amount; who, not in the leaſt diſconcerted either by the queſtion, or the manner in which it was put, "Why look ye, "gentlemen" (anſwered he, turning the *quid* in his cheek, and pulling up his breeches at the hips, with both his hands) "as to that affair, "by the virtue of my oath, *if I ſhould ſwear* "*that I ſold him any, I ſhould be forſworn*, and "I'll always try to weather that point, if I "can."——

As there was no more than a general ſuſpicion againſt the criminals, this anſwer ſatisfied the ſagacity of their judges, and they were diſmiſſed with flying colours.

When they were alone, "Well! (ſaid my "maſter, ſhaking his friend by the hand) I told "you I'd bring you off. Let that be an "example to you for the future. *None but fools* "*convict themſelves*; and *none but greater fools* "*expect it.* I ſhould have little buſineſs in the "merchants ſervice, if I ſcrupled to ſwallow "ſuch a pill as that every day of my life! No! "no!

" no! they muſt be cunning if they can make " an oath, that will ſtick in the throat of the " captain of a merchant-man, even if he can't " find an opening to ſteer through, as was the " caſe here. We have a *ſalvo* for ſuch things. " *The firſt oath we take, as ſoon as we get into em-* " *ployment, is, never to ſwear the truth to a Cuſtom-* " *houſe Officer while we live; ſo that all the oaths* " *they give us go for nothing.*"

But with all his cleverneſs he ſometimes failed of ſucceſs. A lieutenant of a man of war happening, as he was *rowing guard* one night, to ſee a boat put off from our ſhip, purſued it, in hopes of making ſome repriſals for all the extortions he and his brethren daily ſuffered from every one concerned in trade, as he knew it muſt be a *ſmuggler*.

The hope of a prize made the crew of the lieutenant's boat pull with ſuch ſpirit, that they gained faſt upon the *chaſe*, which the others ſeeing, and that it was impoſſible for them to get clear off, they threw their cargo over-board, to diſappoint their purſuers of their expected booty, and then ran the boat a-ſhore, to ſave themſelves from being taken, leaving her of courſe to the captors for their trouble, who towed her away in triumph.

The chief of the ſmugglers was my maſter's ſon, who, in the account he gave him of the affair on his return, was proceeding to tell him the names of thoſe who had been with him, when

the

the father ſtopping him ſhort, "Avaſt! (ſaid he) "coil up your tongue. I deſire to hear no "more of them. Have you a mind to make "me forſwear myſelf when I go to recover my "boat? For have her again, you know, I muſt, "as I can't get another here, nor carry on any "buſineſs without one."——

Accordingly, next morning he made a publick enquiry after his boat, which he pretended had been ſtolen from his ſhip's ſide, and finding her in the poſſeſſion of the lieutenant, demanded to have her reſtored directly, and on his refuſal had him ſummoned before the officers of the cuſtoms, who were judges in ſuch affairs.

As he grounded his claim on her having been taken without his privity, and by perſons unknown to him, he was put to the common teſt of an oath, whether he knew who had been in her when ſhe was purſued by the captors. "By "the virtue of *my oath*, gentlemen (anſwered "he without the leaſt heſitation) *I do not know* "*one of them.*"

So *direct* an anſwer ſatisfied the judges, who were no ways concerned in the affair; but that was not the caſe with the lieutenant: "Hold, "Sir! (ſaid he to my maſter, who was ſheering off, laughing in his ſleeve.) What is that "you ſay?"——

"I ſay (anſwered my maſter, nothing diſconcerted) that I don't know *one* of them."——

"*One*

" *One of them!* (returned the lieutenant, who " inſtantly ſaw through his evaſion.) But, don't " you know *any* of them, though? Take care " what you ſay! Perhaps I know more than " you think I do!"——

" Why, as to that (replied my maſter, laugh- " ing) I cannot ſay ſo much. Perhaps, I may " know ſome of them."——

" How!" (interpoſed the judge, offended at an anſwer, which he thought ſhowed a ſlight to his authority.) " Did you not ſwear, this " moment, that you did not know one of " them?"——

" No more do I! (anſwered my maſter.) " There were twelve in the boat, of whom I " know only eleven; and ſure, in that caſe, I " can ſafely ſwear I do not know *one*, that is, " *the twelfth* of them. Ha! ha! ha!"——

" Take care, Sir (replied the judge) how " you attempt to trifle in this manner be- " fore us again. You know the puniſhment " of perjury, if you ſhould be caught trip- " ping."——

" Never fear! (ſaid my maſter.) I know the " *compaſs* of my conſcience too well for that. " I can ſteer as near that wind as another. " *Thus! thus! and no nearer*, is my trim. I'll " never break an oath; but if I can give it the " *go by*, at the *lee-ſide* thus, by a double mean- " ing, I hope that's no offenſe."——

Then turning to the lieutenant, "Well, Sir! "(continued he) it ſeems *you have carried too "much ſail for me this trip! But, if I meet you "upon a wind again, mind your helm, or I may "chance to fall aboard you.* However, ſince I "can't have my boat cheaper, I muſt e'en "come to your terms, ſo what do you aſk for "her?"——

To this propoſal the lieutenant made no objection: ſetting, therefore, his price, "Zounds! "(ſaid my maſter) I believe you have no conſcience at all, to aſk a man ſo much, and for "his own boat!——

At his mentioning *conſcience*, all preſent ſet up a loud laugh, and repeated the word.

Nothing abaſhed at which, "You may laugh "as much as you pleaſe (continued he) but my "notion of conſcience is, not to aſk out of reaſon for any thing one has to diſpoſe of; and "ſo, Sir, if you have a mind to part with the "boat, I'll give you half what you aſk; and "I ſhould think even that too much, but that "I want her, and do not know where to get "another."

"And as I want to ſell her, and do not know "where to get another purchaſer! (anſwered "the lieutenant) you ſhall have her. Not that "I think ſhe comes very cheap to you upon the "whole, neither! You have ſworn well for her, "at leaſt."

"As

"As to that matter (replied my maſter) that "is my buſineſs, and not your's. Here is "your money; and that's all you need care "for."——Saying this, he paid him for the boat, and then walked off, without concern or ſhame.——I here quitted his ſervice, of which I was heartily tired, and entered into that of the Lieutenant.

CHAP. XVII.

CHRYSAL *makes ſome reflexions on the policy of impoſing oaths of exculpation. The proper method of preſerving the validity of oaths, with the conſequences of their being adminiſtered indiſcriminately to all perſons, and on all occaſions. An uncommon lecture from a Captain of a man of war to his Officers repreſents ſome polite amuſements in an odd light.*

I See you are ſhocked at ſuch flagrant inſtances of profligacy, of bare-faced contempt of every thing moſt ſacred and important. They certainly are a reproach to human nature; but that reproach muſt not be confined to thoſe alone who obviouſly incur it. They who from falſe principles of policy give the occaſion, againſt the conviction of reaſon and experience, are at leaſt equally guilty.

The impotency of man to reſiſt temptation is ſuch, that he is taught to pray againſt it! Why then ſhould thoſe, who are entruſted with the care of directing his actions in the common intercourſe of life, lay ſnares to lead him into it, which there is no probability of his avoiding?

Appealing to the atteſtation of the Deity, is moſt certainly the higheſt aſſurance poſſible to be given by any being, who has a ſenſe of his dependance

dependance on that Deity; nor ſhould ever be given but on the moſt important occaſions, and in the moſt ſolemn manner; nor accepted but from ſuch as may be preſumed to underſtand the nature of it.

In ſuch circumſtances it would never be violated. Man is not ſo deſperately abandoned as to run with his eyes open into inexplicable perdition. But when that atteſtation is given lightly for every trifle, when it is placed in oppoſition to intereſt, and demanded from ſuch as cannot be ſuppoſed to know its conſequence, the reverence which ſhould be its guard is taken off, the violation becomes familiar, and of courſe, the end, for which it is thus impiouſly and injudiciouſly proſtituted, diſappointed; and by that means the moſt ſacred aſſurance of life rendered void, the bond of ſocial confidence and ſafety broken.

The effects of this abſurd policy of making the obligations of religion the common teſt of truth on trivial occaſions, and where intereſt is concerned, are more extenſive than is generally imagined. The immediate wants of nature engroſs the attention of the greater part of mankind too much to let them ſee the congruity of moral virtue, however evident to exerted reaſon; wherefore, the threats and promiſes of religion were found neceſſary to enforce the practice of it: but as the accompliſhment of thoſe is placed at a diſtance, when they interfere with preſent

enjoyments, their force wears off, the threats loſe their terrours, and the promiſes are ſlighted by thoſe, who look no farther than the inſtant moment: and this is the great ſource of that immorality and irreligion ſo prevalent in life, and which will never be corrected, *till legiſlators make oaths leſs common, prevent their interfering with the ſwearer's own intereſt* (as in the inſtances which gave occaſion to theſe reflexions) *explain their nature before they are adminiſtered, and inflict inſtant puniſhment on their violation.*

My new maſter had but juſt returned on board, when the Captain received orders to go and aſſiſt the operations of the war in another part of the world. The news raiſed every one's ſpirits. The ſight of a place in which moſt of them had been guilty of exceſſes which drew them into diſtreſs, and where all had been ſo wretchedly diſappointed, was neceſſarily diſagreeable; and conſequently a removal to another, where a new object attracted their attention from ſuch reflexions, and awoke new hopes, however likely to end in the ſame manner as the former, gave them pleaſure.

There was a decency in the behaviour of both men and officers in this ſhip, ſo very different from what I had ſeen in others, as to ſtrike me with an agreeable ſurpriſe. But I was not long at a loſs for the reaſon. As ſoon as the ſhip was under ſail, the Captain ſummoned all his officers into the great cabbin, and after ſome general inſtructions

ſtructions about their duty, "Gentlemen," (ſaid he, addreſſing himſelf to my maſter, and another, who had been but lately appointed to his ſhip) "as we have never ſailed together before, "I muſt deſire your attention to a few hints, "which I always take the liberty to give in "ſuch circumſtances.

"We are now ſhut up together in a priſon, "where the unavoidable inconveniences of our "ſituation make all our care neceſſary to pre-"vent its becoming inſupportable to us. For "this reaſon, the firſt thing I recommend to "you is, *not to game*. Beſide the danger of diſ-"agreement when the paſſions are agitated by "the viciſſitudes of play, our pay is ſcarce ſuf-"ficient for our ſupport, ſo that the leaſt loſs "muſt be diſtreſſing, the conſequence of which "muſt be general unhappineſs, for who can ſee "his companion miſerable, without ſharing in "his miſery?

"There is another thing, againſt which, "though not commonly conſidered in this light, "I muſt earneſtly caution you, as inevitably "throwing a gloom over that chearfulneſs of "mind, which is the greateſt happineſs of life, "and to us muſt ſupply the place of every other "happineſs, and this is *the vice of profane curſing "and ſwearing*, to the reproach of our ſervice "too prevalent among us.

"There is no man, however hardened in this "deteſtable habit, but knows it to be a crime,

" and feels a check from within every time he " is guilty of it, the repetition of which ſelf- " accuſation ſours his temper, and makes him " diſſatisfied with himſelf, and every perſon and " thing about him. For the truth of this I ap- " peal to unvaried experience. Who ever ſaw " a man ſerenely chearful, that was addicted to " this vice? (I might ſay indeed to any vice, " but as our ſituation precludes us from the prac- " tice of moſt others, I mention theſe only, into " which we may fall) for occaſional mirth is a " very different thing, and too often leads into " conſequences deſtructive of ſerenity of mind, " eſpecially when it is raiſed by means incon- " ſiſtent with virtue.

" I do not ſpeak of the effect which the prac- " tice of virtue has upon our reſolution. The " courage of a *Briton* can never be doubted; " but ſtill there is as much difference between " that of a virtuous and a vicious man, as of " the ſame perſon when ſober, or intoxicated " with liquor. The former is uniform, ſteady, " and attentive to improve every advantage, or " remedy any misfortune; the other boiſterous, " headlong, and blinded with paſſion; for paſ- " ſion only can make a man face death, who in " the cool moments of reflexion is afraid to " die. In a word, one is the courage of a man, " the other the raſhneſs of a brute.

" Againſt theſe two things, therefore, *gaming* " and *ſwearing*, I take the liberty to caution " you,

" you, as a friend, who is ſincerely deſirous of " your welfare; but there is another vice, in re- " ſpect to which I do not think myſelf obliged " to obſerve the ſame delicacy; and this is " *drunkenneſs*, which is liable to be attended " with ſuch dangerous conſequences in our ſitua- " tion in particular, for I think it unneceſſary " to mention any other, that I ſhall ever exert " all the authority entruſted to me to ſuppreſs " it, and therefore it is but juſt for me to de- " clare, that no officer, who is once guilty of " it under my command, ſhall ever do duty un- " der me more.

" This, gentlemen, is what I had to ſay to " you. The obſervation of theſe few hints will " make us happy among ourſelves, and reſpect- " ed by our men, without which it is impoſſible " for us to be well obeyed by them; for, heed- " leſs and profligate as they may appear, they " are the ſevereſt criticks on the conduct of their " officers, and not only, like people in higher " ſtations, revere the virtues which they have " not reſolution to imitate, but alſo actually do " imitate them in a great degree."

CHAP. XVIII.

The folly of a perſon's proſtituting his character to pleaſe his company aggravated by the dangerous miſtake of ridicule for applauſe. CHRYSAL's *maſter changes place with the Chaplain, and preaches him an intereſting ſermon, in which, among remarks more juſt than polite, he gives an uncommon reaſon for the particular deformity of vice in women.*

I Have already taken notice of the effect which the advice and example of the Captain had upon every one in the ſhip. The officers lived like a family of brothers, and the men did their duty with regularity and pleaſure; but, though all paid due reſpect to what he ſaid, it was impoſſible to work ſuch an inſtantaneous reformation, but that ſome of them would now and then jeſt among themſelves upon his conduct, as, from compariſon with that of others of his rank, inconſiſtent with his character; and in other reſpects indulge in the levities of diſcourſe and behaviour too general among perſons not much accuſtomed to the rules of rational converſation.

But, whatever allowances the circumſtances of their education might claim for ſuch ſallies in the officers, the perſon who tranſgreſſed moſt was certainly entitled to none. This was the Chaplain, who, to avoid the imputation of being hypocritically

pocritically ſanctified, ran into the oppoſite extreme.

The ſelfiſh vanity of man always takes pleaſure in ſeeing any perſon debaſe himſelf by acting beneath his character, eſpecially if that character is ſuch as appears to be placed in a more reſpectable point of view than their own. The officers, who in general look upon a chaplain as no better than lumber in a ſhip, and think he is placed as a kind of check upon them, were pleaſed with his proſtitution, which he, by a common miſtake of ridicule for applauſe, gave ſtill further into, *imagining they laughed with him*, when, in reality, *they laughed at him.*

But my maſter beheld the matter in another light, and taking an opportunity one day, when the chaplain and he were by themſelves in the ward-room, "I have obſerved with much con-
"cern, Sir (ſaid he) that you are falling into
"an error, which I have known prove fatal to
"many gentlemen of your profeſſion. This is, de-
"parting from your character, in order to accom-
"modate yourſelf to what you think the humour
"of your company. Believe me, Sir, no man
"ever did ſo, who did not immediately fall into
"contempt with the very people whoſe appro-
"bation he ſtrove to purchaſe at ſo dear a rate.
"The greateſt libertine deſpiſes a clergyman
"who is a libertine; and the reaſon is plain.
"*You are ſet apart from the reſt of mankind, to*
"*perform the rites of religion, and inculcate virtue*

" *by your precepts and example*; *and for this you* " *are paid by the publick, who expect that you* " *ſhould earn your wages, by doing your duty*; *and* " *look upon thoſe who do not as no better than* " *cheats.* This may appear an odd way of " ſpeaking, but it is true nevertheleſs.

" On the other hand, where a clergyman ful- " fils his duty, and enforces his preaching by " his practice, though he may not abſolutely " reform all thoſe with whom he converſes, yet " he will certainly work this good effect, that " he will keep them in awe, and prevent their " running into outrageous lengths of wicked- " neſs, at leaſt in his preſence. For, whatever " people may inconſiderately imagine, *no man* " *ever acted in character, who was not reſpected*; " *no man ever acted out of character, who was* " *not deſpiſed.*

" Do but reflect a moment, in what light " you yourſelf would look upon a lady, who " ſhould ſpeak obſcenely, ſwear, drink, and " talk of fighting, and it will ſhow you the " juſtice of this remark. For what makes theſe " vices ſo particularly hateful in a woman, is " not any thing in their nature particularly con- " tradictory to the ſex, more than our's, but " becauſe they are contrary to her character.

" I beg your pardon, Sir, for talking to you " in this free manner, in reſpect to your con- " duct, which I am ſenſible concerns only your- " ſelf; but as the errors you have fallen into

" appear

" appear to have riſen merely from inadvertency " and miſtake, I think it my duty to caution " you againſt the danger of them, particularly " in your preſent ſituation, with which I have " had the opportunity of being much better ac- " quainted than you poſſibly can be. I was in " the ſervice long, very long, before you were " born, and have been intimate with many " chaplains, but never knew one who proſti- " tuted his character to humour his company, " who was not neglected by them when they " had it in their power to have ſerved him; as, " on the contrary, I have known many in- " ſtances of thoſe who have reaped the happy " fruits of a regular and virtuous conduct, by " which they acquired an eſteem that proved " the foundation of their fortune; and if all " have not been equally ſucceſsful, their diſ- " appointment muſt be attributed to ſome other " cauſe.

" I would not by this be underſtood to ad- " viſe you to a moroſe diſtance and ſtiffneſs of " behaviour, or aſperity of reproof upon every " occaſion. They ſeldom, if ever, do good, " in any ſituation; in your's they will certainly " do hurt, by picquing falſe pride to act in op- " poſition to them, without regard to the conſe- " quences. An obliging temper, and an uni- " formly decent conduct, lead inſenſibly to imi- " tation, where contradiction or direct admoni- " tion would be held impertinent. Theſe hints

" are

" are ſo obvious, that they may ſeem unneceſ-
" ſary; but it is want of attention to them
" which has made ſo many chaplains miſcarry
" in life, and indeed has brought the very cha-
" racter into diſrepute."

The chaplain, who wanted neither natural good ſenſe, nor virtuous inclination, was ſtruck with the juſtice and force of this rebuke. He thanked my maſter in the moſt ingenuous manner, and promiſed to regulate his future conduct by his advice. Such a change at firſt naturally expoſed him to the merriment of his companions; but as my maſter took his part, and ſhowed them the injuſtice of ſuch behaviour, it ſoon wore off, and he had the heart-felt ſatisfaction to find himſelf treated with friendly reſpect and confidence by thoſe whoſe groſs familiarity had before often given him pain, as it evidently implied contempt.

CHAP.

CHAP. XIX.

CHRYSAL *describes true compaſſion; and ſhows the general conſequence of a man's acknowledging diſtreſs, with the reaſons of it.* CHRYSAL'S *maſter is prevailed upon by his captain to tell him the cauſe of his melancholy, which is removed by an act of uncommon generoſity.* CHRYSAL *enters into a new ſervice.*

AS the captain maintained the moſt friendly intercourſe with his officers, he ſoon obſerved that my maſter laboured under ſome heavy diſtreſs of mind. This naturally raiſed his compaſſion, and *as real compaſſion never ſees diſtreſs, which it is not deſirous of alleviating,* he frequently took occaſion, when they were by themſelves, to turn his diſcourſe upon ſuch ſubjects as he thought might lead him to open himſelf; but finding that modeſty, or a reſerve contracted from long acquaintance with misfortune, and obſervation that *the knowledge of a man's being in diſtreſs always ſinks him in the eſteem of his companions, by cutting off their hopes of ſervice from him, and alarming their apprehenſions of his expecting aſſiſtance from them,* prevented his taking the hint, he reſolved to break through forms, and aſk him directly.

Seeing him, therefore, one day, walking the quarter-deck, in a mood of deepeſt melancholy, he

he called him into the great-cabbin, and deſiring him to ſit down, after a little general chat, "I "fear, Sir (ſaid he) that ſomething hangs "upon your ſpirits. If it is proper to be com- "municated, let me know what it is, and de- "pend upon every aſſiſtance in my power to "make you eaſy. I aſk not from idle or im- "pertinent curioſity."

"Sir," (anſwered my maſter, ſtruck with the manner in which he ſpoke) "I believe you "above the influence of ſuch motives, and ſhall "therefore obey your kind commands without "ſcruple. It is too true that I am unhappy; "and I fear my unhappineſs is too common. "I have devoted my life to a profeſſion in which "I have ſerved my country above forty years "with fidelity; and I will take the liberty to ſay "with ſome ſucceſs: And now, when my con- "ſtitution is broken with wounds, fatigue, and "change of climates, when nature calls for reſt "and refreſhment, the only reward I have to "expect is poverty, and its inſeparable attend- "ant, contempt. This, Sir, is the cauſe of my "unhappineſs; and ſuch a cauſe, as I believe "you will think to be a juſt one."

"Very true, Sir (replied the captain) it is "a juſt one; and what muſt affect every man of "ſpirit, and a generous way of thinking. But "you ſhould not yield to it too far! You are "ſtill in the vigour of life; and, while the war "continues, ſhould look forward with hope.

"Though

"Though you have been unſucceſsful hitherto, "fortune may prove more kind."

"Alas, Sir! (returned my maſter.) I have "been ſo long cheated by hope, that I now "deteſt it. When I came out upon this laſt "expedition, our force made me ſo confident "of ſucceſs, and I was ſo well acquainted with "the wealth in the place, that I unhappily gave "way to hope, and ran into expenſes, which, "though far from being unneceſſary, were im- "prudent, and threaten now to involve me in "ruin, on my return home, as it has been "thought proper by our ſuperiours to rate our "ſervice in the conqueſt at ſo low a price."

"If that is the caſe, then! (ſaid the captain) "do not return till matters mend. Whenever "I am ordered home, I'll take care to get you "removed into another ſhip. Your ſtaying "abroad on ſuch an account is not inconſiſtent "with the ſtricteſt honour, as you do it with an "intention truely honeſt."

"Dear Sir (anſwered my maſter) that is "very true. But I am precluded even from the "wretched relief of a voluntary exile. I have "a wife and children at home, the apprehenſion "of whoſe diſtreſſes drives me to deſpair. It was "to clothe and ſettle them in a little habitation, "where they might enjoy the indiſpenſible ne- "ceſſaries of life with ſome degree of comfort, "that I anticipated my ſucceſs, in the manner "I mentioned; and now, as that ſucceſs has

"fallen

" fallen ſo far ſhort of what I thought juſt ex-
" pectation, all the former ſavings of my life
" (ſavings from the very neceſſities of nature)
" will be torn away by the rapacious hands of
" mercileſs creditors, to make up the deficiency
" in the articles bought of themſelves to diſ-
" charge their demands, and my wretched family
" thrown upon the unfriendly world, without
" its being in my power to aſſiſt them. I muſt
" therefore return, and go into a jail, to prevent
" their ſtarving in the ſtreets. What affected
" myſelf only, honeſt indignation enabled me to
" ſupport. I have ſeen boys, whoſe ignorance I
" deſpiſed, and men whoſe principles I deteſted,
" preferred to command, while my ſervices were
" over-looked; but, as I had not the intereſt
" of the former, nor the *modiſh merit* of the
" latter, I bore my fate with patience. But to
" have thoſe dearer to me than life expoſed to
" miſery, is more than I can bear."——

" Nor ſhall you bear it!" (replied the captain, who had feigned to cough, to hide the ſympathetick tear that gliſſened in his eye) " Nor ſhall
" you bear it! How much is the debt that
" alarms you? I will advance it for you di-
" rectly; and not that only, I will take upon
" me to make your merit (to which I am no
" ſtranger) known to your ſuperiours, in ſuch
" a light as ſhall not fail of juſt reward."

" O Sir!" (returned my maſter, as ſoon as the fullneſs of his heart gave him utterance)

" how

" how can I ſubmit to obligations, to which it " is impoſſible I ſhould ever make any return!"

" All the return I deſire (anſwered the captain) " is your friendſhip. Speak! how much do you " want? The pacquet is yet in ſight. I will " order a ſignal to be made for her, and give " you a draft upon my agent."——

" Good Heaven! (exclaimed my maſter.) Can " there be ſuch virtue in man."——

" Come! what is the ſum?" (interrupted the captain, who wanted to ſhorten a converſation, that began to be too affecting to him.) " I ſhall " think you doubt my ſincerity if you heſitate to " accept of my friendſhip."——

" Such a doubt" (returned my maſter, whoſe heart a guſh of tears had lightened) " would be " a blacker crime than ever ſtained my ſoul! " No! I receive your beneficence with humble " gratitude, as from the hand of Heaven, nor " will mention any other return but what muſt " be made to that, till it ſhall be pleaſed to bleſs " me with better ability."

Then pulling out his pocket-book, " Here is " the account of what I owe," (continued he, giving him ſome papers, and a purſe containing little more than his ſhare of the price of the ſmuggler's boat:) " And here is all my worldly " wealth, which is no more than an aſſignment " of my miſerable prize-money, and theſe few " pieces of gold, thrown by fortune in my way, " moſtly ſince our hands were tied up by the " capitulation.

" capitulation. For the balance I muſt be " your debtor."

" For the balance!" (anſwered the captain, returning the purſe and the aſſignment.) " No! " you ſhall be my debtor (if you will call it ſo!) " for the whole. It would be ſtrange friendſhip " to ſtrip you of every thing. You may want " yourſelf."——

" Excuſe me, Sir," (interrupted my maſter, unable to ſuppreſs the delicacy, the dignity of honour) " I am not ſo low a wretch, as to ac- " cept of more than I indiſpenſibly want; and " that for perſons dearer to me than myſelf. If " you will not permit me to make the debt as " light as I can, it is impoſſible for me to receive " your friendſhip, however eſſential to the hap- " pineſs of my heart. I am ſorry you ſhould " have entertained ſo mean an opinion of me."—

" I have the higheſt opinion of you!" (replied the captain, who ſaw what pain he had given him) " and ſpoke in the warmth of my regard, " without the moſt diſtant deſign of giving you " offenſe. But you ſhall make your own terms, " on this condition, though, that, if you have " any occaſion for money, you will apply to me " with the freedom of a friend."

To ſuch a propoſal, it was impoſſible to refuſe aſſenting. My maſter complied, and the captain taking the money, *&c.* from him, deſired that he would order a ſignal to be made for the pacquet, and write his letters, while he himſelf

ſelf ſhould draw a bill upon his agent.—The ſentiments expreſſed by the captain made it a pleaſure to me to paſs into his ſervice on this occaſion.

As ſoon as the lieutenant went out, my new maſter walked a turn or two about his cabbin, in the exalted happineſs of conſcious virtue; and then drawing a bill for conſiderably more than the lieutenant was to pay, he deſired that he ſhould be called, and when he entered, "I beg "your pardon (ſaid he) for interrupting you, "but it is to deſire that you will preſent my "compliments to your wife, and tell her I beg "ſhe will accept of a trifling preſent from me, "which I have taken the liberty to include in "the bill. Come! no words! In this I will "not be contradicted."

"O Sir!" (anſwered the lieutenant, catching his hand, as he reached him the bill, and kiſſing it eagerly) "this is too much! my heart will "burſt."—Saying which, he went out of the cabbin, in a ſilence more expreſſive of his ſoul, than all the flights of eloquence.

CHAP.

CHAP. XX.

Hiſtory of a lieutenant of a man of war. A compariſon between the rewards of merit, in the land and ſea ſervices; with a remarkable inſtance of a great man's remembering an old friend. The conſequence of attempting to ſet up for a mender of manners, and of a man's not meeting an opportunity of making himſelf remarkable.

WHEN every thing was ſettled, and the pacquet ſailed, the lieutenant deſired leave to wait upon my maſter; and as ſoon as he entered, "I come, Sir (ſaid he) to pay you the "thanks, which the fullneſs of my heart would "not let me utter before. You have raiſed "me to happineſs from the loweſt ſtate of de- "ſpair."——

"Hold my friend!" (anſwered my maſter, taking his hand, and ſqueeſing it tenderly.) "Speak no more of it, I conjure you. I am "abundantly overpaid for what I have done, by "the pleaſure of having ſerved a man of merit; "and ſhall think you repine at my happineſs "in being able to purchaſe that pleaſure, if I "ever hear the affair mentioned more."

To relieve the lieutenant, whom he ſaw oppreſſed with gratitude, he then changed the converſation to another ſubject, when the lieutenant ſhowed ſo much good ſenſe, and ſolid judgement, that

that my master could not forbear expressing his astonishment, that such a man should have been so long unpromoted in the service.

"If you can have patience to hear the story "of my life (answered the lieutenant) it will "soon explain that difficulty to you,—My "father was an officer in the army, who "was rewarded for the loss of a leg, and thirty "years service, with the half-pay of a captain "of foot. As he had a wife and children to "maintain and provide for, he retired to a cheap "county, where he lived in the most rigid "œconomy, in hopes of saving, for he could "not make any thing, being precluded from "every kind of industry, by the profession to "which he had devoted his youth.

"The first acquaintance a stranger gets in a "country place is the parson of the parish. It "was my father's happiness to fix his habita-"tion, where there was a clergyman, who "would have been a valuable acquaintance in "any place, and who was equally happy in the "acquisition of a rational acquaintance in him. "The common intercourse of neighbourhood "was, therefore, soon improved between them "into the strongest friendship, in the intimacy "of which, as my father would often naturally "mention his anxiety for his children, his friend "persuaded him to breed me, the eldest, to the "sea-service, in which he thought he himself "might

" might be able to ſerve me, by his intereſt " with ſeveral commanders, with whom he had " been acquainted formerly, when chaplain to " a man of war. ' That is the ſervice!' (would the good man ſay, with pleaſure ſparkling in his eyes.) ' That is the ſervice in which merit ' is never diſregarded. You would not have ' been laid aſide after thirty years, to pine upon ' five ſhillings a day, if you had been bred to ' the ſea. No! no! merit is all that is neceſ- ' ſary there.'

" Such an argument was too flattering to my " father's hopes to be reſiſted. Though he " felt the evil of not having been bred to buſi- " neſs himſelf, he was charmed at the thought " of his ſon's being placed in the way of riſing " to an higher ſphere, and readily aſſented to " the advice of his friend, who, not content " with mere advice, inſiſted on taking me home " with him, and giving me ſuch an education " as ſhould qualify me to make a figure in the " profeſſion to which he had directed me. ' If ' ever a man of merit in the ſea-ſervice (would ' he often ſay) fails of riſing, it is for want of ' having had a good education to found his ' hopes upon. A mere ſeaman may work a ' ſhip, but an Admiral ſhould be a ſcholar.'

" How well this reaſoning was founded expe- " rience daily ſhows; though it would be in- " gratitude in me to arraign it, as the little taſte " for letters which I acquired from his care,

" if

" if it has not contributed to my advancement,
" has at leaſt enabled me to ſupport the ſhock
" of diſappointment, as well as to avoid many
" evils, into which I have ſeen others, who had
" not the ſame advantage, fall.

" At ſixteen (for he inſiſted that it was moſt
" wretched policy to turn a boy looſe upon the
" world before he had come to the uſe of reaſon,
" and was well inſtructed in the principles of
" morality and religion, for the ſake of gaining
" a couple of years advance:) At ſixteen, I ſay,
" I was ſent to ſea, provided with a cheſt of
" books, and mathematical inſtruments, and
" a good ſuit of clothes, not to diſcredit the re-
" commendation which my beſt friend gave me
" to an Admiral, with whom he had been moſt
" intimate when a lieutenant; and whoſe readi-
" neſs to ſerve him in any thing he would not
" admit a doubt of.

" On my preſenting my letter, the Admiral
" at firſt had forgot the name, but recollecting
" himſelf at length on my mentioning ſome
" circumſtances which I had often heard
" my friend dwell upon with pleaſure,
" Very true (ſaid he) I remember him now.
" He made the beſt bowl of punch of any man
" in the navy."——

" This was all the notice the *great man* took
" of him, or of me on his account, except
" I ſhould add, that on his captain's obſerving

" I ſhould make a good figure on the quarter-
" deck, I was directly rated a midſhipman—a
" favour for which I ſoon found I was indebted
" to his caution of ſending me well dreſſed,
" much more than to his intereſt.

" Though I felt this diſappointment of my
" firſt hopes very ſeverely, on my friend's ac-
" count as well as my own, I could not think
" of ſhocking him with the news, but ſaying,
" in general terms, that I had been well received,
" reſolved to apply myſelf to my buſineſs, and
" try whether I could not deſerve that favour
" which he had failed to procure me.

" As I had been accuſtomed to converſation
" very different from that of thoſe with whom
" alone I could now converſe, I took every op-
" portunity, when off duty, of running to my
" books. But the relief I found from this was
" for the preſent over-balanced by the general
" ridicule into which it drew me; eſpecially,
" as I not only avoided obſcenity, ſwearing,
" and drinking myſelf, but had alſo been ſo
" imprudent as to rebuke others for them. I
" was immediately nick-named *the parſon*, and
" avoided by every one in the ſhip.

" I need not deſcribe to you the ſituation of
" a *petit* officer, inſulted by thoſe below him,
" ridiculed by his equals, and looked down upon
" with contempt by his ſuperiours, who forget
" they ever were in his ſtation themſelves. I
" bore it for fifteen years, at the end of which
" time

" time, having the good fortune to be ſent to " *London*, with a preſs-gang, on purpoſe to " mortify me, for I always diſliked that particu- " lar duty more than any other in the ſervice, " on ſeeing an advertiſement in the news-papers, " that all who were qualified by their ſtanding " to be lieutenants in the navy ſhould attend " to paſs their examination, I offered myſelf " without any other introduction, or intereſt, " and was appointed to a ſhip.

" In this ſtation I have now done my duty " for five and twenty years, without reprehen- " ſion; but as I have no *corporation intereſt* to " puſh me at home, none of the *modern polite* " *accompliſhments* to recommend me to the " favourites of fortune, whom I occaſionally " meet in the ſervice, nor have ever had the " good luck to find an opportunity of making " myſelf remarkable, by any action of *eclat*, " though in itſelf no more than a ſucceſsful " blunder, my uniform conduct and care have " paſſed unnoticed, and I remain a lieutenant " ſtill."

The circumſtances of this ſtory affected my maſter in the ſtrongeſt manner. He took the lieutenant by the hand, and deſiring him not to deſpair, repeated his promiſe of uſing all his intereſt to ſerve him, of the ſucceſs of which he had no reaſon to doubt.

Nothing particular happened during our voyage. One inſtance, though, of my maſter's con-

duct in his military capacity I cannot forbear mentioning, as it ſhows his character in the ſtrongeſt light, which was, that he never interfered in the buſineſs of his officers, but if he happened to ſee any thing which he diſapproved, inſtead of interpoſing his own authority publickly, and giving contrary orders, he always ſpoke privately to the officer on duty, and giving his direction under the appearance of advice, let the alteration proceed as immedietely from him, by which means he ſpared him the pain of being found fault with before the men, and conſequently leſſened in their opinion.

This delicacy not only endeared him to them all, but alſo contributed greatly to advance the ſervice. For as every officer knew that he ſhould have the credit, or bear the blame of his own actions, they all exerted themſelves with the utmoſt ardour; whereas, on the contrary, where a captain is continually interfering, and leaving nothing for his officers to do, they grow careleſs of courſe, and do nothing, as they know he will arrogate to himſelf the merit of ſucceſs; if they do not even take a malignant pleaſure in any miſcarriage, the blame of which they have ſo juſt an opportunity of throwing upon him.

CHAP.

CHAP. XXI.

An uncommon method of carrying on a war; with the danger of ſpeaking the truth too plainly, at an improper time. CHRYSAL's *maſter meets his brother. Some account of him. He repreſents certain matters in an odd light.* CHRYSAL *enters into his ſervice. Concluſion of his character.* CHRYSAL *quits his ſervice, on an uncommon occaſion, for one from which he paſſes, in the uſual courſe of buſineſs, into that of the General.*

WHEN we arrived at the place of our deſtination, we found the ſhore covered with an extenſive encampment, and every thing wearing the appearance of the moſt active war.

The firſt thing my maſter did was of courſe to wait upon the General, whoſe operations he was ſent to aſſiſt. He met him viewing an occaſional fortification, which he had cauſed to be raiſed to train his army to the method of making regular ſieges and attacks; and marking out a piece of ground to be ſowed with vegetables, to correct the bad effects of the ſalt proviſions which his men had lived upon in their paſſage thither, and preſerve them in health.

The account he received from my maſter of the heavy loſs ſuſtained in the expedition from which he had juſt come, gave him viſible pleaſure, as it ſeemed to ſet his own conduct, which

was diametrically the reverſe of that obſerved there, in the moſt advantageous light.

" I wonder (ſaid he, looking around him with " an air of conſcious exultation) how officers " can reconcile it to themſelves to throw away " the lives of their men in ſuch a manner! For " my part, I act upon very different principles. " I take care not only to give my troops an in- " ſight into all the various branches of the mi- " litary art, but alſo to keep them in ſuch " health as may enable them to reap the advan- " tage of their experience. There is nothing " ſo bad in war as precipitation. It was the " ſole cauſe of the late General's defeat and " death."——

" Yes!" (interrupted an officer who ſtood near, and had hearkened to him with evident impatience.) " Delay is full as bad. Your troops " want neither health nor experience to con- " quer every oppoſition they can poſſibly meet; " and will accompliſh the end they were ſent " upon before your cabbages are fit for them to " eat, if you will but lead them againſt their " enemies, and not give them time to retire " with their effects into places whither it is im- " poſſible for an army to purſue them, while " your men waſte their time and ſpirits in the " fooliſh parade of mock battles and ſieges, till " they loſe their ardour with delays which can " anſwer no end but that of protracting the war, " and thereby lengthening a lucrative command."

Such

Such an attack was quite unexpected, and ſtruck the General with equal ſurpriſe and indignation, as it touched him in the tendereſt part; however, diſſembling his paſſion, of which he had an abſolute command, "I would have "you to know, Sir (ſaid he) that I think it "the higheſt aſſurance in you to attempt cen- "ſuring my conduct, who are ſent merely to "execute my orders. When I aſk your opi- "nion, it will be time enough for you to give "it, till then, obedience, not advice, is what "I expect from you. If I did not hold it be- "neath me to ſhow reſentment to one ſo abſo- "lutely ſubject to my power, you ſhould in- "ſtantly find the effect of this inſolence. But "preſume not on that protection any further, as "you regard your ſafety. No man provokes "me with impunity."——.

"N—n—nor me!" (ſputtered the officer, whoſe temper, hot as that of the General was cool, caught fire at the fainteſt ſhadow of offenſe, and flamed almoſt to madneſs, as ſoon as rage permitted him to articulate a word) "Nor "m—m—me. I ſeek no p—p—protection but "my ſword, with which I will v—v—vindicate "my own honour, and make good what I ſay.— "Talk to m—m—me of ſafety and im—p— "p—punity!"——

The affair now became ſerious, theſe words ſtriking at the General's ſafety as well as his honour, and convincing him that he muſt ſupport his dig-

nity by a vigorous effort. "What! (retorted "he, therefore, with a tone and air of offended "authority.) Do you menace me, too? I ſup-"poſe you deſign to raiſe a mutiny in the army, "but I'll prevent that."—Then turning to an officer who attended, "Take that madman away "(continued he) and put him under a guard, "till he recovers his reaſon. Such behaviour "muſt not go unpuniſhed."—Then addreſſing himſelf to my maſter with an affected unconcern, as above being moved by what had happened, while the other was led away ſpeechleſs and convulſed with rage, he politely invited him to dinner; an honour, however, which my maſter declined accepting that day, as he was moſt impatient to ſee his brother, who bore a principal command in the army under the General.

The meeting of theſe brothers was truely affecting. The inſtinctive connexion of nature had been indiſſolubly cemented between them by the ſacred bond of friendſhip, founded on a ſenſe of mutual virtue.

Actuated by the ſame principles, they had both devoted themſelves to the profeſſion of arms, in the different ſervices of the land and ſea, as if to avoid the jealouſy of rivalſhip, each being determined to let no competitor take the lead of him in the road to honour.

Undebauched by affluence, and diſdaining to waſte his youth at home in luxury, when the cauſe of his country called for his aſſiſtance, the elder

elder bravely came to ſeek for glory in theſe inhoſpitable wilds, with as much ardour as my maſter purſued it on his proper element, in order to earn honours which he might tranſmit to his own poſterity, equal to thoſe which his brother inherited from his illuſtrious anceſtors.

When the tender enquiries of affection were reciprocally anſwered, my maſter gratified the curioſity of his brother with a particular account of his late dearly bought ſucceſs, cloſing the black detail with ſome remarks on the different conduct of the General of this army, which were much to his advantage.

" Your reflexions, my deareſt brother (an-
" ſwered the officer) are moſt juſt, as things
" appear to you. But when you have had an
" opportunity of ſeeing further, I fear you will
" find reaſon to change your ſentiments, and
" that the *delay* here proceeds at bottom from
" the ſame principle with the *precipitation* which
" produced ſuch terrible effects with you, and
" Heaven grant it produces not as bad. Intereſt
" is the object every where; and *whether that is*
" *purſued by ſacrificing the forces in raſh and ill-*
" *conducted attempts, to gain an immediate* PRIZE,
" or *by letting them melt away in inaction, to accu-*
" *mulate the* PROFITS *of command*, makes no dif-
" ference in the end.

" I would not be underſtood from this to ju-
" ſtify the officer for arraigning the General's
" conduct in ſo publick and perſonal a manner.

" Such ungoverned warmth is inexcuſable. " Proper reſpect muſt be paid to thoſe who " bear authority, or the effect of that authority " ceaſes; indeed, it is not to them, but to him " who delegates the authority, the reſpect is " paid. A General at the head of an army re- " preſents his Sovereign in the plenitude of his " power, and to ſuffer any ſlight to be ſhown " to his delegated character, were to betray the " truſt of that delegation.

" For this reaſon, I think his puniſhment " was neceſſary, and *therefore* juſt: I wiſh I " could add, that it was equally ſo from the in- " juſtice as from the circumſtances of the accu- " ſation which occaſioned it; but to any one " who will not ſhut his eyes it muſt appear be- " yond a doubt, that his great crime was ſpeak- " ing too much, and too plain truth; for, with " all our boaſted care for the preſervation of the " men, their diſtreſſes are ſuch as have not left " me a penny in my pocket, for I cannot ſhut " my hand where my heart is opened. In ſhort, " I am ſo ſick of the whole ſcene, that I have " ſollicited the command of a detached party, " with which I hope to ſhow, that the native " bravery of *Britons*, when led with ſpirit, re- " quires but little experience to enable them to " conquer more formidable foes than naked ſa- " vages, led by a few wretched *Frenchmen*, in a " condition not much better. I ſet out to-mor- " row morning, and think it a particular hap-

" pineſs

" pineſs that you have arrived time enough for " me to have this interview with you."

The reſt of their converſation is not neceſſary to be repeated, as it turned upon their own domeſtick concerns. This much only it is but juſt for me to obſerve, that it ſhowed their conduct in the intercourſe and relations of private life to be as amiable as that in their publick capacities was exalted; and proved that moral virtue is the beſt foundation for true heroiſm.— My maſter's brother having, in the courſe of their converſation, intimated his having ſome preſent occaſion for money, I here entered into his ſervice.

You may judge that I remained not long in the poſſeſſion of my new maſter. His brother had no ſooner left him, than he paid me away, among a large number of my fellows, to a merchant, for ſome additions which he thought it neceſſary to make, at his own expenſe, to the proviſions made by the publick for the ſupport and comfort of his men, through the fatigues and inconveniences of a campaign in an uninhabited country.

The ſentiments expreſſed by my maſter, in the effuſion of his ſoul, to his brother ſhowed his character in the juſteſt light; I ſhall, therefore, only add, that as he acted from principles firmly eſtabliſhed on the invariable baſis of reaſon, there was no danger of his deviating from the path in which he ſet out.

So bright a proſpect made it a pain for me to quit his ſervice ſo ſuddenly; but I have ſince met many mortifications of the ſame kind, my ſtay being always ſhorteſt in the beſt hands.

My continuance, though from another motive, was not much longer with my next maſter, the merchant, who, in the common courſe of ſolliciting permiſſion for a ſhip of his to ſail with a cargo that muſt be ruined by delay, an embargo having been laid on all the ſhipping in the place, in the unfathomable wiſdom of the ruling powers, to promote ſome unintelligible plan of ſervice, gave me to the General's clerk, from whom, in the ſame courſe of buſineſs, I came into the ſervice of the General.

END OF THE FIRST BOOK.

CHRYSAL:

OR, THE ADVENTURES OF

A GUINEA.

BOOK II.

CHAP. I.

CHRYSAL's maſter makes ſome characteriſtick reflexions. He is ſurpriſed at the officer's refuſing to make up matters; and gives a particular reaſon for ſome people's riſing in the world. An extraordinary perſonage enters to him. Deſcription of him. He gives a character of the native AMERICANS; *and offers ſome intereſting remarks on the return they make to the treatment they meet with; and on the practice of forming in the cloſet plans of operations for armies in the field. Odd reaſon why the* AMERICANS *are deſirous of gold.* CHRYSAL *changes his ſervice.*

WHEN I entered into the poſſeſſion of my new maſter, he was waiting in his tent, with the moſt anxious impatience, for the return of

of a perſon whom he had employed to mediate, as of himſelf, between him and the officer, whoſe preſumption in daring to find fault with his meaſures he had thought proper to puniſh in the manner I juſt now mentioned.

His reflexions on an affair that ſtruck ſo dangerouſly at his pride and avarice, the ruling paſſions of his heart, could not be very agreeable; but the ſight of the money gave them a more pleaſing turn. Having aſked the clerk a few queſtions in the way of buſineſs, and diſmiſſed him, he took the purſe, and weighing it in his hand, "Aye! (ſaid he, with delight gliſtening "in his eyes) this will do. This embargo was "a lucky thought. Let who will complain of "the hinderance it is to the buſineſs of the pub-"lick, it advances mine; and that is all I care "for. I came here to ſerve myſelf, and not the "publick; and as there is neither plunder nor "contributions to be got by activity, I muſt "try what I can do another way. I ſhowed "my dexterity at hunting ſavages in the moun-"tains of my own country, and have no deſire "to renew the chaſe here. It was neceſſary for "me then to do ſomething that ſhould make "me remarkable, and gain favour with thoſe "who I ſaw muſt prevail in the end, and there-"fore I ſpared no trouble nor fatigue, neither "friend nor foe, to convince them of my at-"tachment; and in reward they have now given "me this command, in conducting which I

"muſt

" muſt uſe delay, to reap the advantages of my " former activity. *Fabius* ſaved *Rome* by delay; " let me but make my fortune by it, and I envy " him not his fame. I prefer this ſound (chink- " ing the purſe) to the empty noiſe of publick " acclamation, the ſhouts of a giddy mob, who " bleſs and curſe with the ſame breath, and " without knowing why they do either. No! " no! this is the muſick that charms my ear."

His meditations were broken off here by the gentleman he waited for, who informed him that the officer would come to no terms of accommodation; nor even accept of his liberty till he ſhould be acquitted by a court-martial, and have juſtice done him for the affront offered to his honour.

Such an account was far from being agreeable to my maſter, who, for obvious reaſons, wiſhed to have every thing to go as quietly as poſſible. After ſome pauſe, " This is a damned affair (ſaid he) " but we muſt now e'en make the beſt we can " of it. Who could have thought that a coun- " tryman of my own would have proved ſo re- " fractory. We have always been remarkable " for hanging well together. *One and all* was " the word, or we could never have done ſuch " great matters. If it is once found out that " we can be divided, we ſhall ſoon loſe our con- " ſequence, and every man be reduced to *the* " *poor proſpect of depending on his own merit.* " However, ſince he will not accept of his li-

" berty

" berty here, he ſhall e'en go home a priſoner, " and recover it there as well as he can. I am " on the right ſide; and don't fear but my " friends will bring me through more than this; " eſpecially, as it is a national concern to us all " alike. In the mean time, we muſt double our " diligence to make hay while the ſun ſhines."

The gentleman, who was in all his ſecrets, acknowledged the force of his reaſoning; and was going to communicate to him ſome new ſtrokes of management, when word was brought my maſter, that a perſon, to whom he could not properly be denied, deſired to ſee him.

There was ſomething in the whole appearance of this perſon that ſtruck me with the ſtrongeſt curioſity the moment I ſaw him. His ſtature, above the common ſize of man, was formed with the juſteſt proportion, and denoted ability to execute the moſt difficult attempts, which the determined and enterpriſing ſpirit that animated his looks could urge him to. His open countenance, in which humanity and reaſon attempered reſolution, ſhowed the genuine workings of his ſoul; and his whole deportment was in the unaffected eaſe of natural liberty, above the hypocritical formality of ſtudied rules of behaviour, deviſed only to deceive.

As ſoon as he entered, "I am come, Sir," ſaid he, throwing himſelf careleſsly into a chair, and cutting ſhort all that parade of ceremony, on the punctilious obſervation of which my maſter prided

prided himſelf not a little) "to receive your "orders. It is time I ſhould join my people, "who grow impatient, as the enemy have be- "gun to ſtir; and I never chooſe to baulk their "firſt ardour. There is nothing like taking "men in the humour to fight, and before they "have time to conſider too much about it."——

"I deſign, Sir," (anſwered my maſter, with a ſolemnity and affectation of politeneſs, which made the ſtrongeſt contraſt to the blunt freedom of the other) "to call a council of war very "ſoon, at which I ſhall be glad of your aſ- "ſiſtance, to form a plan of operations for the "campaign. When that is done, and all pro- "per meaſures concerted, you ſhall ſet out. "*Precipitation* is very dangerous, and directly "contrary to the principles of the *regular art of* "*war*, by which I mean to proceed. The "ſavages ſhall find ſome difference between my "conduct and that of my predeceſſors. They "ſhan't ſurpriſe me on my march; nor draw "me into an ambuſh, among woods and moun- "tains."

"As to the art of war, Sir (replied the other) "I know no more of it than what Heaven and "common ſenſe have taught me, which is, to "find out the enemy, and beat them as ſoon "as I can, my plan for which is always direct- "ed by preſent circumſtances; nor do I know "how one can be formed to effect, any other "way."

"Your

" Your exploits have always been well exe-
" cuted;" (returned my maſter, with an air and tone of importance, as deſigning to ſay ſomething that ſhould raiſe him in the opinion of the other) " but you have hitherto acted rather in
" the low ſphere of a *partiſan*, than as a gene-
" ral. The duty of a general comprehends
" much more than what you mention, as you
" ſhall have an opportunity of learning before
" we take the field. I intend to go through a
" regular courſe of military operations, to in-
" ſtruct my officers, and diſcipline the men.
" Your *Heaven-taught* generals may beat the
" enemy, but that is the leaſt part of the care
" and duty of a general now a-days. The very
" leaſt part."——

" And, pray, Sir, how much time will this
" courſe of operations take up?"

" I can not exactly ſay; but not above a
" month or two, I imagine."——

" A month or two! why, Sir, I hope we ſhall
" have done the moſt troubleſome part of our
" work by that time; or elſe I do not know
" what may be the conſequence. For, to be
" plain with you, theſe delays will never do
" with the *uncivilized Americans*, who judge of
" things only by common ſenſe; and cannot be
" made to comprehend this way of carrying
" on a war, by lying ſtill in a camp, and
" doing nothing. They have formed very diſ-
" advantageous notions of the delays already

" made;

" made; and think a man, who does not ad-
" vance to fight his enemy, is afraid of him;
" and, therefore, if they are not led to action di-
" rectly, they will desert; so that, if I stay a
" month or two here at school, to learn a
" lesson I may never have occasion for, I
" must find other forces to put it in practice
" with."——

" Cannot you devise any reason that may ac-
" count for your staying, to their satisfac-
" tion?"——

" Really, Sir, not I! I never was good at
" devising reasons, destitute of truth, in my life;
" and have entirely forgot the practice since I
" have conversed with the *Americans*, who are
" far from being such fools as they are too ge-
" nerally thought to be. Though they have not
" the advantages of learning, they see by the
" light of natural reason through all the boasted
" wiles of policy; and, as they never mean de-
" ceit themselves, detest it in others, however
" speciously disguised; nor ever place confidence
" a second time, where it has been once
" abused."——

" How! the *Americans* never mean deceit!
" Surely, you must know better! they are the
" most perfidious, deceitful savages that burthen
" the earth; and it would be an advantage to
" the world, if the whole race of them was ex-
" terminated."

" Such

" Such of them as converſe much with *civi-*
" *lized Europeans*, it is too true, learn many
" things from them, which are a diſgrace to
" their own *Savage* nature, as you call it. But I
" ſpeak of the general diſpoſition of the people.
" Treat them with candour, probity, and ten-
" derneſs, and they will return them tenfold, in
" all their intercourſe with you; as, on the
" other hand, they ſeldom fail to retort the con-
" trary treatment with ſevere uſury. Nor are
" they to be blamed. In all their dealings with
" the *Europeans* they find themſelves impoſed
" upon in the groſſeſt manner; in a manner not
" fit to be practiſed even with brutes. Their
" ſenſibility is quick, and their paſſions ungo-
" verned; perhaps, ungovernable: how then
" can it be wondered at, that they make returns
" in kind, whenever they find opportunity,
" and become the moſt dangerous enemies?
" Whereas, if thoſe paſſions were attached by
" good treatment, they would be the moſt af-
" fectionate, ſteady, and careful friends. I
" ſpeak from experience. I treat them as ra-
" tional creatures; and they behave as ſuch to
" me. I never deceive them; and they never
" deceive me. I do them all the good offices
" in my power; and they return them many-
" fold. In ſhort, I practiſe to them the beha-
" viour which I wiſh to meet from them, and
" am never diſappointed. All the evils which

" have

" have been ſuffered from them have proceeded " from the unhappy error of thinking ourſelves " poſſeſſed of a ſuperiority over them, which na- " ture, that is, Heaven, has not given us. They " are our fellow-creatures; and in general above " our level in the virtues which give real pre- " eminence, however deſpicably we think of, " and injuriouſly we treat them."——

" They are much obliged to your character " of them at leaſt; whatever others may be. " And, pray, Sir, what is it you would have " me do, to preſerve the good opinion of theſe " moſt *virtuous people?*"——

" I preſume not, Sir, to ſay what is proper " for you to do. All my deſire is, that you " will diſmiſs me directly, in a capacity of mak- " ing good my promiſes to my friends; and, by " the time you ſay you ſhall be ready to move " with your army, I hope to give a good ac- " count of the enemy."——

" That, Sir, I have no thought of. How- " ever, as you are ſo deſirous of going, I ſhall " not delay you. I'll form a plan of operations " for you this very day."——

" For me, Sir? I do not underſtand you. " How can you know what will be proper or " poſſible for me to do, at the diſtance of many " hundred miles, in a country you are an utter " ſtranger to. In *Europe*, where war, like a " game at cheſs, is *played*, as I may ſay, entire-

" ly

" ly by art, that method of planning in the " cloſet the operations of the field may do, per- " haps; but then it is neceſſary that each ſide " ſhould play the game by the ſame rules. A " body of *Americans*, who know nothing of the " art of war but fighting, might be apt to move " ſo irregularly, as to diſconcert the whole " ſcheme of the *game*. Indeed, by what I can " judge of the matter, that very method of plan- " ning the operations of a campaign is advan- " tageous only to the general, as it prolongs " the war, and conſequently the emoluments of " command, by tying up his hand from availing " himſelf of any unforeſeen circumſtances in his " favour. Whereas, if armies were ſent out " only to fight, as formerly, before the *improve-* " *ments* in the art of war, the diſpute would " ſoon be decided, and even the vanquiſhed " better off than the victors are at preſent, whoſe " riches and ſtrength are ſo exhauſted, by this " dilatory way of proceeding, that they are not " the better for their ſucceſs. I hope, Sir, you " do not take offenſe at the plainneſs of my " ſpeech. I have ſo long been accuſtomed " to converſe with *Savages*, who ſpeak juſt " what they think, that I am become quite a " ſtranger to that *diſſimulation* which is called " *politeneſs* among *civilized* nations, and muſt " make uſe of words in their original intention " of conveying my thoughts."——

" Not

" Not in the leaſt, Sir! I like your free " manner much. It is in the character of a " ſoldier. I will order every thing to be got " ready for you directly; and you ſhall go as " ſoon as you pleaſe, at full liberty to act as " you ſhall ſee proper."——

" I hope, Sir, I ſhall not make a bad uſe " of that liberty. And, pray, among the " other things, do not forget to order me ſome " money."——

" Money, Sir! What occaſion can you " poſſibly have for money, among *Savages*, who " do not know the value of it?"——

" Why really, Sir, that queſtion is natural. " But the matter is, the *Savages*, who come " among the *Europeans*, ſee every thing govern- " ed by gold, in ſuch a manner, that they have " taken it into their heads we worſhip it; and, " therefore, are become as eager for it as our- " ſelves, in hopes of gaining an aſcendancy over " us, when they have got our god in their poſ- " ſeſſion."

A conſcious heart takes to itſelf more than was ever meant. The dry manner in which this was ſaid touched my maſter to the quick, and made him not deſire to purſue the converſation any farther with ſuch a free ſpeaker, nor have ſo nice an obſerver longer about him, to pry into the motives of his actions. Giving him, therefore, the money he required, he wiſhed

him

him ſucceſs, with a forced politeneſs, and diſmiſſed him to prepare for his departure.

It was a pleaſure to me to change my ſervice on this occaſion; as the idea I had conceived of my new maſter, both from his appearance and converſation, promiſed me ſome variety, and my curioſity was heartily ſurfeited with the regular art of war.

CHAP.

CHAP. II.

The manner in which CHRYSAL's *maſter was received by his ſubjects. Antiquated principles on which his authority was founded. His odd opinions and conduct in ſome important matters, with the conſequences.*

AS ſoon as every thing was ready, my maſter ſet out for home, where he arrived without meeting any thing remarkable in his journey, as you may ſuppoſe, through uninhabited deſerts.

The reception he met with from his people was the very reverſe of what *Sovereigns* uſually meet. They welcomed him with ſincere joy and reſpect, which they expreſſed in the over-flowing of their hearts, without ceremony or parade: I ſay, "Sovereigns," as he really enjoyed that power in its moſt rational ſenſe, his will being a law to all around him, *becauſe they always found it juſt, and advantageous to them.*

Though the account which he gave my late maſter of his manner of treating his people ſhowed a juſt foundation for his power over them, I found that it depended not on that alone. His authority, like that of the firſt rulers of the earth, was founded alſo on the relations of nature, and ſupported by its ſtrongeſt ties,

he being literally the father of his ſubjects, the king of his own family.

To explain this, it is neceſſary to inform you, that on his fixing his reſidence among theſe *uncivilized* nations, in order to gain an influence over them the more readily, he had laid aſide all ſuch rules of conduct as ſeemed to him to be contradictory to natural reaſon, and the publick good, however forcibly enjoined for particular convenience.

Among theſe, the chief was, the cuſtom of reſtraining the commerce between the ſexes, and confining individuals to each other, after the deſire which firſt brought them together had ceaſed: As he ſaw that the ſtrongeſt paſſion which governs the human heart is that deſire (for his philoſophy was not refined enough to ſuggeſt one thought of governing the paſſions) and as the continuation of the ſpecies depends entirely on the gratification of it, he held every oppoſition to it to be moſt criminal in itſelf, and detrimental to the publick good (properly the firſt object of every civil inſtitution, and which can be promoted no way ſo effectually, as by promoting population) and therefore exerted all his influence to encourage that commerce, under ſuch reſtrictions only, as were evidently neceſſary to procure the great end of it, the propagation of the ſpecies. He gave liberty to every man to converſe with as many females as he pleaſed,

pleaſed, and to quit them whenever he thought proper, provided they were not pregnant. To the women the former liberty could not be extended, as the uſe of it would defeat the deſign; or, where it had not immediately that effect, cauſe confuſion, and prevent both paternal care, and filial duty, by the uncertainty of deſcent: but the latter inſtance they enjoyed equally with the men, being allowed to chooſe whom they liked, and if not pregnant quit them at pleaſure, for others, without reproach or ſhame, the offspring of all which connexions were to remain with the fathers.

I ſhall not ſay whether reaſon originally ſuggeſted this ſyſtem to him; or (as is often the caſe) whether he ſought for reaſons to ſupport the dictates of inclination. Be it which it would, the effect was the ſame. His ſubjects increaſed in an uncommon degree; and he founded, like the patriarchs of old, an authority on the juſteſt of all principles, voluntary conſent, over a people inſeparably linked to him, and to each other, by the ſtrongeſt ties of nature, as being, by this complicated commerce, in the ſtricteſt ſenſe one family; for, diſdaining to make laws for others, which he would not obſerve himſelf (like too many of his brother legiſlators) he had enforced his precepts ſo powerfully by his example, that there was ſcarce a houſe in any of the tribes around him, from which he had not

taken a temporary mate, and added a child of his to their number.

That his reception, as I have obſerved, ſhould be moſt cordial from ſuch ſubjects is not to be wondered at. They flocked about him on his arrival, and hailing him with one voice by every tender relation of nature, brother, father, ſon, huſband, ſhowed an affection too ſublime to be expreſſed by formal rules, and impoſſible to be ſeen without ſympathiſing in it.

When this tribute was paid to nature, he called the elders of the people together, and diſtributing among them the preſents which he had received for that purpoſe, gave them an account of the mighty army ſent by his Sovereign againſt the enemy, and propoſed to them to aſſiſt its operations.

There required not many arguments to confirm their confidence, in one who had never deceived them. They readily and ſincerely aſſented to his propoſal, and ſending to invite all their neighbours to join them, ſeparated to make the very little preparations neceſſary for perſons who were ſtrangers to luxury, and knew no wants but thoſe of nature.

CHAP.

CHAP III.

CHRYSAL describes his master's habitation and family. He makes an uncommon progress. The manner in which he found the females of his household engaged. Remarks on FINERY. *Account of their amusements, with the manner in which they usually ended. The method by which* CHRYSAL's *master kept peace in his family.*

AS soon as my master had thus concluded the business of his publick character, he retired to devote a few minutes to his domestick concerns.

His habitation was built on an eminence, by the side of a rivulet, the banks of which were covered with a number of neat little cottages, inhabited by the females of his present family; for, instead of attempting to prevent their quitting him for other men, as inclination led them, he not only always dismissed them with presents in the most friendly manner, but also kept up an intercourse of regard with them and their successive husbands, every one of whom he attached to himself in the strongest manner, being particularly ready, on all occasions, to do them every good office in his power.

In these cottages they bred up their children, and enjoyed from his care all the necessaries of life, with more convenience and comfort than

they could poſſibly have experienced among their own people, unembittered by any of thoſe jealouſies and feuds which ſuch a ſituation might ſeem to threaten; ſo equally did he diſpenſe his favours among them.

When he had given ſome orders in his houſe, he walked out to viſit his family, and enjoy the ſublimeſt inſtance of the happineſs of power, in making all who were ſubject to it happy, by the unaffected tenderneſs with which he enquired after their welfare, and returned their careſſes, on his entering every cottage.

The appearance of theſe females was moſt different from the delicate ſenſibility that ſoftened the beauties of *Amelia* *, the fire which animated the charms of *Olivia*; but cuſtom, that reconciles all things, had made them agreeable to him, eſpecially as no compariſon could there be made to their diſadvantage; and the honeſt readineſs with which they met his addreſſes, the warmth with which they ſhared his joy, amply over-balanced any imaginary defect in feature or complexion; any ignorance of thoſe affected arts of coyneſs, which, over-acted, often pall the taſte for long expected pleaſure.

As his women did not expect his viſit ſo ſoon, he found them engaged, according to their different inclinations, either in the management of their domeſtick œconomy, or in ſuch amuſements as cuſtom had made pleaſing to them.

The

* *See Vol* I.—*Page* 20.

The occupations of the former kind were neceſſarily confined within a narrow circle, from the circumſtances of their lives; but in the latter, fancy, ſole ſovereign of the ſcene, aſſerted her unbounded rule, and ſported in variety of forms, many of which I ſoon had an opportunity of ſeeing.

As my maſter proceeded in his patriarchal progreſs, he met a conſiderable number of the females of his family, with ſuch of the neighbouring men, as from age or idleneſs were unfit for more uſeful employments, aſſembled together under a ſpreading tree that grew before the door of one of their cottages, dreſſed out in their gayeſt apparel, and engaged in different kinds of diverſions. At the ſight of him they all aroſe, and would have deſiſted, but he prevented them, and not only made them reſume their ſports, but alſo ſat down himſelf in the midſt of the company, to be a ſpectator of them.

It ſeems it was a cuſtom among them to meet frequently thus, at each other's cottages, for the pleaſure of enjoying their favourite amuſements to more advantage together, and diſplaying their *finery*, to ſet off which, no art nor care was neglected on theſe occaſions They dreſſed themſelves in their beſt blankets, which were covered all over with patches of various colours, to make them look more gaudy. Their heads were adorned with plumes of feathers. Strings of glaſs-beads were rolled round their arms and

legs. Their toes were loaded with rings of pewter and braſs; and their necks and faces were carved with figures of birds and flowers, and painted of various hues.

I ſee your laughter moved at this deſcription; but that proceeds from narrow prejudice, and want of rational reflexion, on which it would appear that all uſeleſs ornaments are equally juſt objects of ridicule, whether made of ſilks and laces, or party-coloured rags; whether bits of glaſs, or pearls and diamonds. Think, I ſay, but for a moment; and you will ſee that in reality there is nothing more abſurd in wearing one kind of metal, or upon one part of the body, than another; *rings of braſs*, for inſtance, *on the toes*, than *golden on the fingers*; in *carving the ſkin*, than *boring the ears*; or *in painting the face blue and green*, than *white and red*. The ſame vanity is the motive of all, and all produce the ſame effect of admiration; as, in things equally unſupported by reaſon, cuſtom and caprice bear equal ſway. The difference in the means, therefore, makes none in the end; at leaſt none to the diſadvantage of the perſons of whom I ſpeak, as it certainly is more abſurd to laviſh treaſures, that might be ſo much better employed, to a worthleſs purpoſe, which cheaper baubles would anſwer as well.

The amuſements in which they were engaged, were as whimſical as their dreſſes. Some ſkipped about, deſcribing various figures in their motions,

motions, till want of breath and wearineſs obliged them to ſit down. Others, and theſe the greateſt number, were employed in chucking ſhells, or pebbles from the brook, into holes dug in the ſand, for prizes of bits of tin or braſs, which game they applied themſelves to with the greateſt eagerneſs and anxiety, and many were ſo expert at it, as to ſtrip their antagoniſts of all their hoards, often, indeed, not without the aſſiſtance of chicanery and deceit: And a few of the eldeſt, and thoſe who had nothing to ſtake at play, gathered up and down into little ſets, and entertained themſelves with making remarks upon the reſt, not always dictated by good-nature or truth; while the miſtreſs of the cottage buſied herſelf in adjuſting ceremonials, ſettling her company at their ſeveral amuſements, and ſerving them with milk, or broth, and tobacco, the fatigue of which office ſhe never repined at, as her conſequence was eſtabliſhed by the number of her gueſts.

Though mere amuſement was the obvious end of theſe meetings, other objects were generally purſued, and other conſequences produced by them. Intrigues were commenced, and often completed; and, trifling as the prizes were for which they contended, emulation and avarice agitated the paſſions, and ſet the competitors together by the ears, till they almoſt clawed out each other's eyes.

Their ſports were at length beginning to take their uſual turn. The tempers of the loſers became ſoured; and the detection of ſome *deep* ſtrokes of play gave riſe to altercations, which would ſoon have been followed by blows; but my maſter interpoſed his authority, and put an end to their diſputes, when the party broke up; ſome retiring to keep the aſſignations they had made in the warmth of their inclinations, and the reſt to calculate their winnings, and deviſe ſchemes for retrieving their loſſes, at their next meeting; and my maſter having ſingled out the happy favourite of that night, repaired with her to his own habitation, without any of the reſt taking offenſe or even particular notice of the preference, as they had it in their power to ſupply their loſs elſewhere.

I have obſerved your aſtoniſhment at this whole ſcene, eſpecially at my maſter's hardineſs in expecting to be happy among a number of women, and attempting to keep them in order together, when one, in your opinion, is more than any man can manage: but what will it be, when I tell you that that number often amounted to hundreds; and that he never had recourſe to any kind of ſeverity, in his conduct to them?

To comprehend this, it is neceſſary for you to conſider, that moſt of, if not all, the uneaſineſſes which embitter the life of man ariſe from an officious intruſion into the uneaſineſſes of others, or an over-weening partiality to himſelf,

ſelf, that makes him expect treatment, which he does not give, and take offenſe where none is meant him, for matters not worth his being offended at—an obſervation that will hold in every ſtate, publick and private; among *governours*, as well as *governed*.

His rule, then, was never to take part in their diſputes among themſelves, nor offenſe at their infidelity to his bed, of which he himſelf ſet them the example. This diſarmed them of that *perverſeneſs, which is the ſex's moſt offenſive weapon.* They remained conſtant to him, becauſe they were not reſtrained from being otherwiſe, whenever they pleaſed; nor did they trouble him with their diſputes, becauſe they ſaw he would not be troubled at them.

CHAP. IV.

CHRYSAL's master is honourably rewarded for his services. An unexpected meeting with one of his country-women introduces an uncommon remark on a common matter. The lady gives an odd instance of conjugal love; and refuses the civil offer of CHRYSAL's *master, for a natural reason.* CHRYSAL *changes his service.*

THE very next morning his people assembled before his door, in readiness to obey his commands, when he led them directly in quest of the enemy, sharing himself in all their fatigues, and teaching them to despise danger by his example; so little did he know of the duty of a general.

It would be tiresome to enter into a particular description of an expedition carried on among wildernesses and deserts, and consisting chiefly of ambuscades and surprises. It is sufficient to say, that he was successful in all his enterprises, reason and presence of mind serving him instead of experience in the regular art of war, and courage well supplying the place of discipline in his men.

Such services could not miss of reward from a just and judicious Sovereign. His power was enlarged; and he received those marks of favour and distinction which were originally instituted to

to excite virtuous emulation, and ſet the ſeal of honour on ſucceſsful merit; though, like moſt other human inſtitutions, they too often produce the contrary effect, and reflect only diſgrace, from being beſtowed contrary to their intention, and on unworthy objects.

As he was preparing the way thus for the motions of the main army, whenever the general ſhould think proper to let it move, ſome of his people brought before him an *European* lady, whom they found wandering in thoſe unfrequented wilds, her guide having miſtaken his way.

Such a ſituation neceſſarily entitled her to his compaſſion and aſſiſtance; but he ſoon felt himſelf ſtill further intereſted in her favour, when he found ſhe was a native of his own country, and of a family not entirely unknown to him, before he came to fix his abode in this diſtant part of the world.

There is not a ſtronger inſtance of the force of that attachment, called in a larger ſenſe *patriotiſm*, than the inſtinctive affection which perſons of the ſame country, though utterly unacquainted before, feel for each other the moment they meet in a ſtrange place. My maſter inſtantly called her his dear country-woman, and embracing her with the tenderneſs of a brother, led her away to his own tent, which he reſigned to her, as the beſt accommodation he could give her; and then went and ordered every thing that had belonged

belonged to her, which his men looking upon as fair prize had taken and divided among themſelves, to be reſtored, promiſing to recompenſe the captors himſelf.

As ſoon as ſhe had adjuſted her appearance in ſome better manner, ſhe ſent to deſire my maſter's company, for he had told her that he ſhould not come without permiſſion, for fear of intruding improperly upon her; and on his expreſſing wonder what could have brought her thus into the midſt of thoſe deſerts, ſo far away from every *European* ſettlement, ſhe gratified his curioſity with the following account, which was often interrupted by ſighs, tears, and every expreſſion of the moſt poignant grief:

Her huſband (ſhe ſaid) who had been an officer of diſtinguiſhed rank in the *Engliſh* forces, had fallen in one of the defeats they ſuffered in the beginning of the war, before *England* had exerted herſelf in ſuch a manner, as to entitle her to ſucceſs; the news of whoſe death affected her ſo extraordinarily, that ſhe reſolved to brave all the fatigues and dangers of ſo long a voyage by ſea, and journey through uninhabited deſerts in time of war, for the melancholy pleaſure of one laſt view of his dear remains, which ſhe had accordingly obtained, though not ſo much to her ſatisfaction as ſhe could have wiſhed, the body being in a ſtate of putrefaction, not poſſible to be approached without diſguſt and abhorrence, nor to be diſtinguiſhed from any other maſs of corruption,

corruption, when ſhe had cauſed it to be dug out of the grave in which it had been buried, on the ſpot where he had been killed, among the other victims of the day; and was now returning home, when ſhe had happily been found by his people.

Though my maſter was as much unverſed in the regular rules of politeneſs, as of war, good-nature taught him the eſſentials of one, as reaſon had of the other. He heard out her ſtory, though not without pity and contempt at the extravagance and folly of it; and, conſoling her with ſome general remarks on the errour of indulging immoderate grief for things not to be remedied, offered to ſend her under a ſufficient eſcort to his own habitation, where ſhe might remain in ſafety, and have the converſation and attendance of his women, till the concluſion of the campaign, when he would convey her himſelf to the next ſea-port, in order to her returning to her own country.

Though ſhe would have looked upon any attempt to conſole her as the higheſt affront in another ſituation, her preſent circumſtances made her think it not proper to ſhow any reſentment of it to him: beſides, there was ſomething in his appearance, that ſomehow made it leſs diſagreeable from him than it would have been from any other perſon; and would poſſibly have influenced her to accept of his offer, had not the mention

mention of *his women* alarmed her delicacy, and ſet her virtue on its guard.

Reſolving, therefore, to have this cleared up, before ſhe would give any direct anſwer to his offer, ſhe expreſſed her high ſenſe of his kindneſs in the politeſt terms; and entering into a general converſation, among other queſtions of mere curioſity, aſked him, in a careleſs manner, whom he meant by *his women*, and in what capacity they ſerved him?

Such a queſtion was more than he deſired, though he had inconſiderately laid himſelf open to it. However, as he thought no delicacy could juſtify deceit, he anſwered her directly, and without preface, that they ſerved him in the natural capacity of women, while they pleaſed to continue with him; nor did he deſire any other ſervice from them.

Though ſhe was a good deal diſconcerted at this anſwer, ſhe had the addreſs not to ſeem to underſtand it, in hopes that he would take the hint, and explain himſelf into a meaning leſs offenſive to her modeſty; to give an opportunity for which, "I preſume Sir (replied ſhe) you "mean that they wait upon your lady, or per-"form the other domeſtick offices of your fa-"mily, in which women ſervants only are em-"ployed?"

"No, really, madam, (anſwered he) that was "not my meaning. I have no lady for them to "wait upon; nor do they live ſo immediately

" in my own family, as to have any domeſtick " employment in it."

" How, Sir! Are you not married?"

" Not particularly to any one perſon, ma- " dam."

—— " That's very ſtrange!" (ſaid ſhe, pleaſed at having gained ſo material a piece of intelligence, and reſolving to purſue the converſation.) " That is really very ſtrange. And " pray Sir, are theſe ladies *Europeans*? I ſuppoſe " (ſighing heavily and wiping her eyes) they are " the unhappy widows of ſuch officers as are " fallen in the ſervice, to whom you have ſhown " the ſame politeneſs and humanity, as I now " experience from you."

" I am ſorry madam," (anſwered he, to ſatisfy her curioſity at once, and put a ſtop to queſtions which began to be troubleſome) " to be " obliged to undeceive you in an opinion ſo " favourable to me; they are all native *Ameri-* " *cans*, by whom I have had children; and in " whoſe unfeigned affection, and eaſy comply- " ing tempers, I find ſuch ſatisfaction, that I " never ſhall quit them to attach myſelf ſolely " to any one woman, however ſuperiour to them " in the advantages of beauty and education; " not, indeed, that they want qualifications " to raiſe both love and eſteem, as you will " find when you have been ſome time among " them."

This,

This, which was too plain for her to affect not to underſtand it, inſtantly put an end to the pleaſure ſhe had begun to find in his converſation, and determined her as to his propoſal. "I "am much obliged to you for your civil offer, Sir," (ſaid ſhe, bridling up her chin, and making him a formal curteſy) "but I cannot accept of it. "I have not the leaſt deſire for the converſation "of *Squaws*, and am in haſte to leave this ſavage "place; for which reaſon I ſhall take it as a "favour, if you will ſend ſome of your people "to guard me to the next *Engliſh* ſettlement, "to-morrow morning. At preſent, I am quite "exhauſted with fatigue, and want ſome reſt, "if the diſtreſs of my heart will permit me to "take any."

This thought recalled the rememberance of her loſs: She burſt into a flood of tears; and my maſter withdrew, after finding that his attempts to conſole her only aggravated her grief, and gave offenſe to her delicacy.

Unverſed as he was in the ways of the polite world, he was too well acquainted with the ruling principles of the ſex, which in every ſtate are the ſame, not to ſee through this change in her behaviour; but the diſcovery had no other effect, than to confirm him in his contempt for ſuch hypocritical levity. Accordingly, finding ſhe continued in the ſame mind next morning, he made the beſt proviſion he could for her journey,

ney, and ſent her away with a ſufficient guard, forcing upon her a purſe of gold *(in which I was)* to defray any accidental expenſe, for which ſhe might be unprovided, in caſe ſhe ſhould not directly meet a ſhip ready to carry her to *Europe*.

CHAP.

CHAP. V.

CHRYSAL's miſtreſs gives ſome ſtriking inſtances of female conſiſtency. She is cured of her grief by a perſon of accompliſhments as extraordinary as her own. The advantage of comparative excellence. CHRYSAL's miſtreſs marries, and he changes his ſervice for that of an old maſter.

AS ſoon as my miſtreſs found herſelf out of ſight of my late maſter, ſhe gave vent to that indignation and rage of diſappointment which ſhe had thought proper to ſuppreſs while in his preſence. "Inſenſible brute! (ſaid ſhe.) "Not quit his odious *Squaws* for any woman! "And to have the rudeneſs to tell me ſo to my "face! It ſhows his groſs, low taſte, for which "ſuch animals are fitteſt."——

Then pauſing for ſome moments: "What a "charming figure! (continued ſhe, ſighing ſoft-"ly.) Such a ſize! Such ſtrength and eaſe in "every motion! And then the manly beauty "in his looks! Had I but the poliſhing of "him! I was too haſty—I ſhould have waited "to inſinuate myſelf into his heart by degrees. "I could not have failed of ſucceſs. My huſ-"band was as ſtrongly attached to another "when firſt I undertook him. Oh! deareſt, "beſt of men! Never ſhall I meet your fel-"low! Never ſhall another poſſeſs your place "in this faithful, wretched heart."——

A flood

A flood of tears here interrupted her meditations, which were often renewed in the ſame ſtrain during her journey, and always ended the ſame way.

On her arrival at the ſea-port, ſhe had the mortification to find that ſhe muſt wait ſome time for a paſſage home, all the ſhips which were there having ſailed a few days before.

But her vexation at this diſappointment was conſiderably lightened by the converſation of ſeveral companions in it, particularly that of a chaplain of a regiment, who had taken ſuch offenſe at the immorality of the army, and the uncomfortable way of living in thoſe ſavage countries, that he had hired a ſubſtitute, at a cheap rate, to do his duty, and was returning home to enjoy a life more agreeable to the delicacy of his character and inclinations, and exert his talents to more advantage in paying court to his patrons, than in reforming ſoldiers, or converting ſavages.

Extremes are never laſting: the violence of my miſtreſs's grief had been too much for nature to ſupport, and was beginning to abate of itſelf, when my late maſter awoke another paſſion, that would ſoon have ſupplanted it; and though he did not purſue his advantage as far as he might have done, he had opened her heart, and inſpired a warmth ready to receive any other impreſſion.

As

As the chaplain's function and her rank, not to omit the accompliſhments of both, ſeemed to point them to each other as the moſt proper companions, it was not ſtrange that they ſhould ſoon grow intimate, nor that their intimacy ſhould be inſenſibly improved into a tenderer paſſion. They made *tête-à-tête* parties, at games which no one elſe in the place knew how to play with them. They talked of all the places of pleaſurable reſort in *England*, and of the amuſements purſued at them: and they raiſed their own conſequence in the eyes of each other, by boaſting of acquaintances with perſons the knew only by name.

Such uncommon accompliſhments were not without effect. Each took the tales of the other upon credit, becauſe their own met the ſame complaiſance, and found a pleaſure in being deceived by one whom it was an equal pleaſure to deceive.

But this was not the only thing that advanced their mutual influence upon each other. All human excellence is but comparative. Though far from being beautiful, they were the neareſt to being ſo; though far from being well-bred, they knew moſt of the common ceremonies in which good-breeding is by many thought to conſiſt, but which really are the incumberances of it, of any perſons there; and conſequently appeared to enjoy thoſe advantages in the higheſt degree. They regulated the aſſemblies, they laid

laid down the rules of play, they made fashions; in a word, their opinion was the law in every matter of polite amusement and concern.

Thus *cut out* for each other, it was impossible for this accomplished pair not to come together. They were accordingly married, not more to the grief of their respective admirers, than the joy of their rivals, the bride forgetting her grief for a dead, in the arms of a living husband, and the happy bridegroom pleasing himself with the thought, that the high accomplishments of his lady would increase his interest with his noble patrons.

To crown their happiness, a few days after they were married an *English* man of war put in there, in its way home, the captain of which politely offered them their passage. Such an opportunity was not to be missed: They accepted his offer with the greatest joy, and in return made a *party* and entertainment for him, when he won *me* from my mistress at a game of *brag*, the only game, indeed, at which he thought himself a match for her.

Though I had no reason to regret leaving her service, my present change gave me no great pleasure, as it wanted even the recommendation of novelty, my new master being the captain with whom I had left the *Spanish* coast, who had at length been made so happy as to be ordered home.

CHAP.

CHAP. VI.

CHRYSAL *arrives in* ENGLAND. *His maſter is ſaluted by a ſight not very pleaſing. The hiſtory of the unfortunate hero of the day opens ſome myſterious ſcenes.* THE OBVIOUS USE OF COUNCILS OF WAR.

(CHRYSAL's *maſter having in the courſe of his voyage home given offenſe to his officers, by his prudential regard to his own ſafety; to obviate any bad conſequences which might attend their complaining to his ſuperiours, he reſolved to employ* CHRYSAL's *mediation in his favour, as ſoon as he ſhould arrive in* ENGLAND.—Vol. I. page 57.)

His arrival in *England* preſented him with a ſcene that confirmed this reſolution, and made him wiſh he had not been in ſuch haſte to return. On his entering the harbour, he found the boats of all the men of war there drawn up around one ſhip, in which was diſplayed the dreadful ſignal of the execution of the commander. The ſight appalled his ſoul, conſcience anticipating the ſtroke of juſtice, and taking this as an omen of his own fate.

He had not time to brood over theſe gloomy reflexions long, when an officer came on board him, with an order to attend the execution in his boat, along with the other captains, which he

he obeyed, in a ſtate of mind ſcarce leſs unhappy than that of the criminal.

As ſoon as the bloody work was done, he waited on the chief commander, where the melancholy in every face he met was far from relieving the anxiety of his mind. He could have no pleaſure in ſuch company. When he had anſwered a few general queſtions of courſe, he went away to the ſhip of a captain of his intimate acquaintance, to learn ſome account of this ſhocking ſcene, for he had not had reſolution to make any enquiry about it; nor even to attend to the converſation of every one around him, which would have explained the whole.

After mutual congratulations on their meeting, my maſter ſignified his curioſity, which his friend promiſed to gratify *over their bottle*, as ſoon as they ſhould be alone after dinner.

Accordingly, when *the coaſt was clear*, "You "deſire information in an affair (ſaid he) that "has given our corps the deepeſt wound we "have ever received. The circumſtances are "many, and myſterious; but I will ſtrive to "give you a notion of it in as few words as "poſſible, for it can be no pleaſure to either "of us, to dwell upon ſuch a ſubject.

"In the beginning of the war, ſoon after "you went to *America*, the unfortunate man, "who has this day fallen a ſacrifice to the hu-"mour of the times was ſent out with a fleet, "to counteract the ſchemes of the enemy, and

" relieve a fortreſs of our's which they were
" then beſieging. (This was the purport of
" his *publick orders*; but it will appear to you
" preſently, that he muſt have received *pri-*
" *vate* ones, of a very different nature, from
" thoſe who, at that time, had the conduct of
" affairs.)

" Inſtead of making the expedition neceſſary
" to have carried his orders into execution with
" effect, he trifled away the time here in ſuch
" a ſhameful manner, uſing every frivolous ex-
" cuſe he could deviſe, to delay his departure,
" that the voice of the publick was raiſed againſt
" him; and it was found neceſſary to appoint
" another to the command in his place, in or-
" der to ſilence their clamours; but, unfor-
" tunately for him, he failed the very day be-
" fore his appointed ſucceſſor was to have ſet
" out to ſuperſede him.

" The ſame dilatory conduct threw a damp
" upon every thing he attempted to do. He
" ſeemed reſolved upon nothing; but, though
" he was inveſted with the fulleſt powers to act
" as he ſaw proper himſelf, called councils of
" war to deliberate upon every the moſt trifling
" occaſion, that he might have the ſanction of
" their advice, to excuſe his neglect, and often
" direct diſobedience of his orders; for you well
" know, that *a council of war always ſpeaks the*
" *ſenſe of the commander.*

" One

" One inſtance of his proceeding in this " manner will be ſufficient to juſtify this re- " mark. He had been ordered to call at an- " other fortreſs in his way, and take from " thence a re-enforcement for the garriſon of that " which he was ſent to relieve: On his arrival " there, inſtead of demanding that re-enforce- " ment peremptorily, as his orders empowered " him, and making the expedition which the " urgency of the occaſion required, he ſhowed " ſuch indifference to the enterpriſe by his de- " lays, and expreſſed ſuch diffidence of his ſuc- " ceſs, that the commanding officer took the " alarm; and, following his example, called a " council of war, to conſider, whether he ſhould " ſend it, which, on mature deliberation, he " abſolutely refuſed, on account of the danger " of weakening his own garriſon, in caſe it " ſhould be attacked; whereas, it was noto- " rious, that could never happen, if this un- " happy man did his duty, as the force he had " was ſufficient to keep the command of the ſea, " and prevent any ſuch attempt. But, far from " urging this, he quietly acquieſced in the offi- " cer's excuſe, and ſailed away without the re- " enforcement, for which alone he had been or- " dered to ſtop there.

" On the ſame principles, when at length he " came in ſight of the place, the ſiege of " which was puſhed with the greateſt vigour,

" he excuſed his ſending any relief to it, on a " pretence of the danger of entering the har- " bour, as if any military operations could be " free from danger, and ſailed away to ſeek a " fleet of the enemies, which was coming to " aſſiſt the ſiege, and which he came up with " ſooner than he wiſhed.

" An engagement now was unavoidable; but, " ſtill he had it in his power to prevent any " effect from it, which he notoriouſly did, by " trifling away his time in vain, unneceſſary *ma-* " *nœuvres*, and pretending to come to action " at a diſtance too great for him to do any " thing.

" The enemy, whoſe intereſt it was to avoid " an engagement, in which their moſt ſanguine " hopes could not promiſe them ſucceſs, availed " themſelves of this conduct, and made their " eſcape, after having, from the ſuperiority " which his *keeping aloof* in this manner gave " them, treated very roughly a part of his fleet, " that had advanced with leſs caution, and come " really to action.

" This ſerved him as a pretence for calling a " council of war next day, by the advice of " which, inſtead of purſuing the enemy, who " had evidently fled from him, or making any " attempt to relieve the fortreſs which was be- " ſieged, obviouſly the firſt object of his being " ſent out, he returned directly to the other, " from which he was to have taken the re-en-

" forcement,

" forcement, as I mentioned before, to defend
" that from the danger brought upon it ſolely
" by his own conduct, leaving the former, de-
" prived thus of every proſpect of relief, to take
" its fate; and giving up the honour of his
" country, by flying from an enemy whom he
" might have vanquiſhed, and who had fled
" from him before.

CHAP. VII.

Continued. Conſequence of the foregoing conduct. An extraordinary ſentence attempted to be reverſed in an extraordinary manner, and by as extraordinary perſons. The reaſon of this; and why it miſcarried. More myſteries. Juſt fate of the BUNGLERS, *who left their poor* TOOL *in the lurch; with the conſequences of this affair to a certain corps.*

" THE conſequence of ſo ſtrange a con-
" duct was, the nation took fire; and
" with one voice demanded ſatisfaction for ſuch
" a ſacrifice of their intereſt and honour. He
" was, therefore, not only deprived of his com-
" mand, but alſo ſent home a priſoner; and,
" after ſuffering every indignity and abuſe which
" the rage of a licentious populace, broken looſe
" from all bound, could ſuggeſt, brought to his
" tryal, found guilty of *neglecting to do all in his*
" *power to deſtroy the enemy*, and for that crime
" has this day ſuffered the ſentence of the law—
" a ſentence not more unexpected by him, and
" extraordinary in itſelf, than in the manner it
" was paſſed; and afterwards attempted to be
" reverſed by thoſe who had paſſed it, when they
" reflected on the danger of eſtabliſhing a pre-
" cedent, that might one day come home to
" themſelves.

" For,

" For, perſuaded (perhaps by their knowledge " of the true motives of his conduct) that no- " thing more was meant by the tryal than to " amuſe the publick, they reſolved to act their " parts in the farce, and found him guilty, as I " have ſaid, of ſuch a part only of the charge " againſt him, as common ſenſe could never " conceive puniſhable with death, it being im- " poſſible to acquit him abſolutely of the whole, " without involving themſelves in his guilt, by " which means they expected to ſave both his " life and their own credit. But ſuch *trimming* " ſeldom anſwers; *the tables were now turned*; " and it was reſolved to carry even this lame " ſentence into execution with the utmoſt ſeve- " rity.

" Alarmed at a meaſure ſo contrary to their " expectations, his judges were driven to their " wit's end; and, from a provident regard to " *themſelves*, left nothing unattempted to ſave *him*. " They retracted, as far as was in their power, " their own judgement! They petitioned the " miniſtry! They applied to the whole body " of the legiſlature. They prayed! They ex- " poſtulated! They wept! but all was in vain. " His fate was determined; and they only drew " upon themſelves that contempt which ſuch " inconſiſtency deſerved.

" From this general account of his conduct it " muſt have appeared to you, that he acted by " *ſecret* orders, directly oppoſite to his *publick*

" ones, as no man, however proſtituted in prin-
" ciple, however infatuated by fear (neither of
" which, it was well known, was his caſe)
" could otherwiſe poſſibly have acted in ſuch a
" manner, the inevitable conſequences of which
" were diſgrace and death. But if any doubt
" ſhould remain in your mind, from the incon-
" ſiſtency of man's actions at different times,
" the leaſt attention to the following circum-
" ſtances will effectually remove it.

" Repeated informations of the enemies de-
" ſign upon that place had been ſent to thoſe in
" power, for a conſiderable time before; but
" no notice was taken of them to re-enforce the
" garriſon; nor even order the officers, regu-
" larly belonging to it, to attend their duty,
" till the ſiege was actually begun; when this
" unfortunate man was ſent, but ſo late, that
" the common impediments of contrary winds
" might very poſſibly have delayed him ſo long
" as to defeat the deſign of his going, even had
" he exerted himſelf with the greateſt ardour.

" Had it alſo been really intended that he
" ſhould re-enforce the garriſon, a force proper
" for that purpoſe would have been ſent directly
" from home, without ſubjecting him to the
" further delay of ſtopping for it at another
" place, where it might not be to be ſpared, as
" proved to be the caſe.

" And, laſtly, had he not had ſecret reaſons,
" which he thought ſufficient to juſtify his con-
" duct,

" duct, it is not to be imagined that he would " have waſted the time before he ſailed; that " he would have accepted the refuſal of the " commanding officer of the fortreſs, from which " he was to have taken the re-enforcement; that " he would not have attempted at leaſt to throw " ſome relief into the place; and that he would " not have fought the enemies fleet, when he " had the faireſt proſpect of defeating it; for " the tenour of his former life acquitted him, as " I have obſerved, of all ſuſpicion of cow- " ardice, or traiterous correſpondence with the " foes of his country.

" His conduct at, and after his tryal con- " firmed theſe remarks. Depending on ſupport " from thoſe in power, he neglected the only " meaſure prudence could have ſuggeſted for his " defenſe, which was to have retorted the charge " of his miſcarriage upon his very accuſers, and " perplexed the cauſe with ſuch a variety of " matter about *diſobedience to ſignals, and breach* " *of diſcipline*, as to blind the world, and be- " wilder his judges, ſo that they ſhould be glad " to have acquitted him, if only to get rid of " the plague of the enquiry; a method which " experience had ſhown to be effectual in as " flagrant a caſe as his. And, even after he " was condemned, his behaviour proved, that " he expected a pardon to the laſt moment, for " a crime which he had committed in obedience " to their orders. Why he did not produce

" thoſe orders, in his vindication, muſt have " been, that they were only *verbal* ones; which, " in the blind luſt of miniſterial confidence and " favour, he had been weak enough to take.

" The reaſon of his being ſo baſely deſerted " is too obvious. The adminiſtration of thoſe " who had employed him had been ſuch a ſeries " of blunders (not to call it by a ſeverer name!) " that they had not only been ſupplanted by an- " other ſet, who promiſed better things, but " were alſo obliged to give him up, *as a ſin-* " *offering*, to the rage of the people; as pro- " tecting or pardoning him wou d have implied " a participation of his guilt: And in this light " the other party viewed it ſo ſtrongly, that they " exerted all their ſtrength to have ſaved him, " in hopes of being able by his means to gain " a clue, to guide them through ſome of thoſe " labyrinths of iniquitous and falſe policy, " which they ſuſpected, but could not otherwiſe " detect, to the entire overthrow of their rivals.

" This ſo abſolutely reverſed the whole ſcene, " that they who ſhould have ſupported, now " found themſelves obliged to cruſh him, in " their own defenſe, which, as it was the moſt " popular meaſure, they were ſtill able to do.

" There is but one thing more neceſſary for " me to add, and that is, the motive for their " giving him ſuch ſecret orders; which, as far " as reaſon can judge in ſuch dark confuſed my- " ſteries, muſt have been this:

" Provoked at the repeated inſults and in-
" juſtice of the *French*, the miniſtry here had
" precipitately plunged themſelves into a war,
" without being prepared, or even determined
" to purſue it; and then, like a parcel of chil-
" dren who have exhauſted all their ſtrength
" and reſolution in one ſpiteful aſſault, ſtood in
" a ſtate of ſtupefaction, utterly at a loſs how
" to proceed, or retreat; till rouſed, at length,
" by the preparations and menaces of the ene-
" my, they unluckily blundered in their fright
" upon the wretched expedient of letting them
" take this fortreſs, that, for the recovery of it,
" they might have a pretence for giving up to
" them thoſe places about which the diſpute be-
" gan: and ſo *botch up* a peace any way, to get
" rid of a war they found themſelves unable to
" manage.

" The conſequence of this notable ſtroke of
" policy was, the ſpirit of the people was en-
" flamed to ſuch a degree, by this diſgrace upon
" their arms, that they have puſhed on the war
" with a reſolution little ſhort of madneſs; and
" the ſcheme, which the miniſters had ſo wiſely
" laid for their eſcape, only ſealed their ruin.

" This, my friend, is a ſhort but juſt ſketch
" of this unfortunate affair, to which I ſhall
" only add one circumſtance, to prove what I
" ſaid of his being *ſacrificed to the humour of the*
" *times*. The officer who commanded in the
" fortreſs which was beſieged, and who in the

" defenſe of it had betrayed a want of every " qualification neceſſary for ſuch an office, *but* " *courage*, and had even let that be over-ruled " by the inſtances of his officers, who were tired " of fatigues and dangers from which they ſaw " no proſpect of relief, to ſurrender it at laſt, " without any abſolute neceſſity, was loaded " with honours of every kind, in reward of a " merit merely negative at beſt; that is, for " not having done the very worſt in his power, " and ſurrendered it at firſt, without making " any defenſe.

" I have thus gratified your curioſity, in the " beſt manner in my power. If I have made " any miſtakes, they are not thoſe of intention; " but have proceeded from the inability of rea- " ſon to trace ſuch myſterious actions to their " real motives. One obſervation, though, I " know, I cannot be miſtaken in, which is, " that this affair has given *a wound to our corps* " (as I obſerved before) *which it can never re-* " *cover*. For, after ſuch an example, what officer " of any rank can expect to eſcape, ſhould he " neglect to do his duty in the fulleſt manner, " however powerful his private motives to the " contrary may be!

" For my own part, I cannot ſay, it yet af- " fects me much. I am poor, and therefore " muſt puſh. If I ever have the good luck to " be other, I know the conſequence; and will " rather quit the ſervice, than hazard being ſhot,

" as

" as I know muſt be any man's fate, who ſhall " hereafter be found to fail in the performance " of his duty, from a prudential regard to the " preſervation of his life or fortune; however " great that fortune, or powerful his family." " And ſo, *here's to you, neck or nothing* is now " the word."

The effect which this whole account had upon my maſter may be eaſily conceived. He *pledged* his friend, though without naming *the toaſt*; and aſſenting to his remarks by a heavy ſigh, took his leave, without ſaying a word.

CHAP.

CHAP. VIII.

CHRYSAL changes his ſervice. He gets a view of a court of CIVIL JUDICATURE, *on an extraordinary occaſion. Some reflexions out of the common cant on the delays of the law. A whimſical application of an old ſtory produces the ſtrange effect of putting a counſellor out of countenance. The neceſſity of abſolute power in ſome governments with a common deciſion, by which nothing is decided.*

"AS ſoon as my maſter returned to his ſhip, "he took *me* from his purſe once more, "and looking earneſtly at me, for ſome mo- "ments, 'We muſt part! (ſaid he, with a ſigh) 'we muſt part! but I hope to good purpoſe. 'Thou only waſt the cauſe of that conduct 'which now gives me fear; exert, therefore, 'thy influence equally where I now ſend thee; 'and thou wilt excuſe my fault, if it is one.'—

"Tears, at the thought of loſing me, here "choaked his utterance. He gave me a laſt "kiſs, and ſent me directly away, in company "with a conſiderable number more, to mediate "his peace.

"As the delicate nature of this tranſaction "required ſome addreſs, he entruſted the ma- "nagement of it to his purſer, who had con- "vinced him, by many inſtances, of his ſaga-

"city

" city in the methods of obtaining an influence " over the great *."

My new maſter's road leading through a city where a matter of great moment was under judicial determination, he waited for the event, to gratify a natural curioſity.

The affair was this: A *foremaſt-man* in a *guard-ſhip*, lying in one of the neighbouring harbours, had by repeated miſbehaviour, in going clandeſtinely on ſhore, contrary to the expreſs orders of his captain, provoked him at length to give him *a dozen at the gang-way*, in order to terrify others from following his example.

Inſtead of being reclaimed by this puniſhment, the fellow perſiſted to miſbehave in ſuch a manner, that the captain, who was remarkably humane in his diſpoſition, diſcharged him from the ſhip, to avoid the pain of puniſhing him any more.

This was juſt what the wretch wanted. Accordingly, he went directly to a proſtituted, *pettyſogging* attorney, who had before ſet him on the ſcheme; and employed him to ſue the captain at law, for an aſſault, in puniſhing him in the harbour, where he had no power ſo to do.

In a country governed by laws, they muſt regularly take their courſe in every inſtance, however flagrant in its particular circumſtances.

After all the preliminary delays of practice, which, grievous as they may in ſome circumſtances

* *Vol.* I. *page* 57—58.

ſtances be to an individual, are yet the ſafety of the publick, the affair was now brought to a legal deciſion. You are too well acquainted with *the forms of law* to require a minute account of all which were obſerved in this caſe. But there was one incident which I cannot paſs over.

As this was a matter that importantly concerned the intereſt of the navy, the rulers of it had ordered all the captains of the *guard-ſhips*, in the harbour where it had happened, to attend the trial, in order to inform the court, in the uſages of their ſervice.

One of thoſe, who had never ſeen a court of *civil judicature* before, but was a man of natural good ſenſe, and ſome reading, having liſtened to the unintelligible pleadings, and groſs exaggerations of *the counſel* on both ſides of the queſtion, eſpecially thoſe *hired* in the proſecution, till his patience was quite exhauſted, at length aroſe, and having obtained permiſſion from the judge to ſpeak, addreſſed himſelf to the court in theſe words:

" I am ſent here by thoſe to whom the King has " entruſted the conduct of his navy, to explain " the nature and rules of our ſervice to this court, " in caſe I ſee any danger of their forming a " wrong judgement of it, from inexperience in a " matter ſo much out of their way.

" The little gentleman yonder has ſpent ſo " much breath, and ſhown ſuch great reading

on

" on the ſubject, that I imagine it is proper for " me to make him ſome anſwer, which I ſhall " do in as few words as poſſible, being not half " ſo *long winded*, as he. But firſt, I muſt beg " leave to tell him a ſtory, to conform to rule.

" I have read in a book (for I perceive that " common ſenſe ſignifies nothing here, if not " ſupported by a quotation, it matters not whe- " ther to the purpoſe, or not!) that a certain " Philoſopher having declaimed one day for a " conſiderable length of time before *Alexander the* " *Great*, at the head of his army, on the duties " of a general, the Emperour turned about to " *Parmenio*, one of his generals who ſtood near " him, and aſked him what he thought of his " ſpeech?——*Sire*, (anſwered *Parmenio*) my " opinion is, that *I never heard a fool talk ſo* " *learnedly*.——

" I make no applications. All that I ſay " on this occaſion is, that I am ſure that gen- " tleman has never been at ſea; and conſe- " quently knows nothing of the ſervice, on " which he has been haranguing with ſuch " vehemence, and elocution. He has expatia- " ted moſt pathetically on the injuſtice of in- " flicting corporal puniſhment, without a legal " trial, and condemnation; and flouriſhed on " the danger of ſuch an invaſion of liberty. " Theſe, to be ſure, are fine words; but I much " doubt whether they are properly applied on " this occaſion. The moſt perfect form of

" government

" government is allowed to be *abſolute deſpotiſm*, " as beſt calculated to work its effects without " delay. In all the communities in this world, " I doubt if there is one, where immediate obe- " dience to the command of the governour is ſo " indiſpenſibly neceſſary to the ſafety of the " whole, or where individuals are ſo inſenſible " to every other motive to obedience but fear, " as in a man of war.

" I have myſelf the honour to command a " ſhip, in which I have five hundred men " under me, the greateſt part of whom " (I am ſorry to ſay it) are the *out-caſts* of " human nature, as from ſome unhappy cir- " cumſtances is, and perhaps muſt always be " the univerſal caſe in our ſervice. Now, as " inſtances daily occur, in which a moment's " delay or heſitation to execute my orders, " though attended with the greateſt difficulty, " or moſt imminent danger, muſt evidently " hazard the loſs of the ſhip, and every life in " her; I deſire that gentleman to inform me " how I am to act, ſhould one of the men, " whom I order, ſuppoſe to cut away a yard " that is broke in the ſlings, refuſe to go aloft, " and tell me I have no right to puniſh him, till " he is regularly tried and found guilty! Shall " I admit of ſuch an anſwer, to be an example " to the reſt? Or ſhall I puniſh him with ſuch " ſeverity on the ſpot, by my own mere autho- " rity, as to terrify any other from imitating " him?

" him? The anſwer to this plain queſtion will " determine the affair under conſideration. If " it is ſaid that in the preſent caſe the ſhip's " being in the harbour makes a difference, let " us ſuppoſe her on fire there, and that differ- " ence will vaniſh. In a word, if the abſolute " authority, indiſpenſibly neceſſary for carrying " on our ſervice in ſome inſtances is attempted " to be abridged in any, it will of courſe be at " length diſputed in all, and the ſervice ruined. " All that can be done is to be cautious not to " truſt it in improper hands."

This method of reaſoning changed the face of the affair. The counſellor hung down his head, and ſlunk out of the court. The fears which had been entertained for publick liberty vaniſhed; and the jury ſimply *found the fact*, but left the *point* of law to be determined by the judges; ſo that after all this expenſe and trouble matters remained in the ſame ſtate of uncertainty as before, to the great joy of the lawyers.

CHAP.

CHAP IX.

CHRYSAL's maſter joins a remarkable ſet of company. Their characters. CHRYSAL *changes his ſervice. Account of the enterpriſe on which his late maſter's companions were going; with the convincing arguments they uſed to procure obedience to their commands.*

(*THE purſer having, on his arrival in* LONDON, *parted with* CHRYSAL *regularly, in the execution of the commiſſion entruſted to him by his captain,* CHRYSAL, NOW, IN THE SHAPE OF A GUINEA, *after ſeveral changes of ſervice, and a variety of curious adventures, has fallen into the hands of a* PHYSICIAN *and* AUTHOR; *who, having ſhown him many of the myſteries of the latter profeſſion, proceeds to introduce him into new ſcenes. Vol.* I. *page* 122.)

Happy in the contemplation of his own abilities, and the pleaſing proſpects they opened to him, my maſter proceded to *figure* as uſual, in his variegated ſphere. Accordingly, he deſcended from his *aerial citadel*, and going out *to viſit his patients*, repaired directly to a tavern, to join a ſet of *criticks* and *choice ſpirits*, *ſouls of ſentiments and fire*, who were going that evening upon an expedition, that was to immortaliſe their names.

This

This was no leſs than to aſſume the modeſt power of making laws that ſhould affect the property of a number of their fellow ſubjects; the execution of which they were reſolved to enforce by the mild and equitable means which the reſpectable legiſlature of the mob always uſe to enforce obedience to their decrees.

Thoſe who were honoured by being taken thus under their immediate command, were the *actors* of *plays* and *interludes* of which, as the works of *genius*, and calculated for the entertainment of *the idle*, they claimed the ſole, and abſolute rule.

You conclude from this, that they muſt have been perſons of learning, and large fortune, whoſe affluence gave them leiſure to attend to ſubjects, which their education qualified them to judge of; but the contrary was the fact. They were either *blanks in the Creation*, whom a ſuperficial ſmattering of letters had filled with ſuch an opinion of themſelves, as to make them look with contempt upon every exertion of induſtry, as beneath their dignity, though at the ſame time they were barely able to ſubſiſt without it, by all the little ſhifts of œconomy; or, tradeſmen, almoſt abſolutely illiterate, who, from a prepoſterous ambition of hiding an ignorance that was not any reproach to their ſtation, ſet up for the arbiters of taſte, on the ſtrength of a ſet of phraſes picked up at random, and of which they knew not even the meaning; and neglected the buſineſs by which they were to earn their bread,

bread, in order to make a ſhow of knowledge, that could be of no uſe to them.

When this illuſtrious ſet had ſufficiently conned their ſeveral parts, in the great enterpriſe which they were going to undertake, and raiſed their reſolutions to a proper pitch by wine, they prepared to adjourn to the ſcene of action, the Theatre; and calling for a *bill*, I was *changed* by my maſter to pay his *club*, and directly borrowed from the landlord by one of the leaders of the party, who *changed* me again at the door of the Theatre, to pay for his admiſſion.

Theſe changes of my ſervice, however, did not prevent my ſeeing the proceſs of this extraordinary affair. On the contrary; as I now belonged to the whole theatrical community in general, I had an opportunity of getting a full inſight into the nature and myſteries of every part of that profeſſion.

I ſee you deſire to know my ſentiments on a ſubject, that has been canvaſſed by the ingenious of all ages. Such a curioſity is natural, and ſhall be gratified at a proper time; but at preſent I muſt not interrupt the account of this tranſaction.

From the manner in which thoſe ſelf-made legiſlators had talked, when together, of every circumſtance in the management of a theatre, and profeſſion of an actor, you would have concluded that they were going to over-turn the whole preſent ſyſtem of the ſtage, and inſtitute another

another on principles directly oppoſite, according to their own ideas of perfection.

But that was not the caſe. Among all the errors and abuſes, againſt which they declaimed with ſuch vehemence, they thought proper to attack only one, which they thought moſt intereſting to themſelves in particular. This was the right, which reaſon, and law gave the performers to fix the price of their own labours.

In the infancy of the ſtage in *London*, before it had been brought, by much labour and expenſe, to ſuch a degree of perfection as to attract the attention of the publick, it had been the cuſtom after a certain part of the repreſentation was over, to admit perſons for leſs than was paid at the beginning.

The obvious reaſon of this was to allure company of any kind thither, and take the moſt they could get, rather than keep the houſe empty. But when the paſſion for ſeeing plays aroſe to its preſent height, this expedient appeared to be no longer neceſſary, and therefore was diſuſed; a change which, thoſe who conducted the entertainments of the theatre juſtified, by alledging the enhanced ſalaries of the actors, and the improvements made in the machinery and decorations of the ſtage ſince the time when that cuſtom was introduced, which they ſaid required reimburſement, by a method, that could not juſtly

juſtly be taken offence at, as *none were obliged to go, who did not approve of the terms.*

Such a meaſure was moſt alarming to theſe men of taſte, ſome of whom denied themſelves the pleaſure of going to the beginning of the performance *becauſe they were not able to pay the full price*; as the others *could not get from behind their compters before it was half ended*; and for theſe good reaſons both thought it the higheſt grievance to have a cuſtom aboliſhed, that had been ſo convenient to them.

Accordingly, as ſoon as the performance began, they all aroſe, and without any reſpect to the reſt of the audience, interrupted the players in the moſt outrageous manner, nor would deſiſt, till the managers ſhould promiſe to redreſs the grievance which affected them ſo ſeverely, and take half-prices, as before.

This was too flagrant a violation of juſtice to be ſubmitted to ſo ſuddenly. The managers, therefore, refuſed; upon which *theſe redreſſers of grievances* gave a looſe to their reſentment, at ſuch an inſtance of diſobedience to their authority; and tore the houſe to pieces, doing more damage to the proprietors than their own entire worldly ſubſtance could repair.

CHAP.

CHAP. X.

The ruinous appearance of the ſcene of action ſupplies matter for mirth to thoſe whoſe trade is to laugh at every thing. The point carried againſt law and reaſon. Enquiry into the cauſe of this. The riſe of the prejudice againſt the profeſſion of an actor.

WHEN theſe men of genius and publick ſpirit had thus gallantly accompliſhed their enterpriſe, they marched off in triumph, denouncing a repetition of their reſentment, ſhould their orders not be obeyed.

The appearance of the houſe, after this ravage; and the looks of the actors, when they ventured to creep out of their hiding holes, ſeemed to realiſe the mimick ſcenes uſually exhibited there. All was havock, deſolation, amazement, and affright. Crowns, ſceptres, candleſticks, and broken benches were jumbled together: Sovereigns, and ſweepers, lords, link-boys, ducheſſes, and cinder-wenches joined in one common lamentation of their fate.

This, however, laſted not long. Their hearts were not formed of ſtuff, for grief to make a deep impreſſion on: nor were they ſo unaccuſtomed to the rubs of life as to be dejected at any miſchance. Their concern, therefore, wore off with their fright; and one of them, reſuming his character of turning every thing to ridicule,

marched with ſolemn pace and rueful countenance up to the motley ruins now collected into a heap, and with ſome droll variations, apt to the occaſion, *ſpouted* over them a tragick ſpeech, in all the emphaſis and trick of woe. The humour inſtantly ran through them all. Mirth grinned on every face; and they vied in cracking villainous jeſts on each other's *undoing*.

But the managers had ſuffered too ſeverely in their property to be in ſo merry a mood. They conſulted among themſelves, and *with the ſages of the law*, what was proper for them to do, to obtain redreſs for ſuch injuſtice, and prevent the menaced repetition of it. But all was to no purpoſe. Law gave way to licentiouſneſs; and they were obliged to ſubmit to the moſt intolerable of all tyrannies, *that of the mob*.

You are ſurpriſed that ſuch things ſhould be, in a country governed by equal and eſtabliſhed laws. In ſpeculation it muſt ſeem ſtrange; but the leaſt acquaintance with life would reconcile you to inconſiſtencies ſtill groſſer. There is ſomething, however, in the circumſtances of this caſe, which deſerves attention, and makes it not improper to trace to their origin the prejudices from which ſuch injuſtice could proceed.

When the ſyſtem of Divine worſhip, which is now profeſſed in theſe parts of the world, was firſt propoſed to mankind, the human mind was a ſlave to ſuperſtitions, which were a diſgrace to that portion of reaſon given for its direction.

By

By a perverſion, of which man alone is capable, the celebration of thoſe ſuperſtitions, though profeſſedly deſigned in honour of the Deity, was attended with *games*, and *ſcenical interludes*, in which the groſſeſt immoralities received the ſanction of religion, and were practiſed openly as pleaſing to him. This was done to attach the paſſions of the multitude; and ſatisfy their curioſity with ſenſible repreſentations, in order to prevent their making rational enquiries into the grounds of thoſe ſuperſtitions, the principles of which were ſubſervient to the policy of the ruling powers.

A Religion inſtituted on purpoſe to reclaim man from immoralities and ſuperſtitions, and reſtore him to the dignity of his nature, neceſſarily ſtruck at every thing that conduced to their ſupport: Accordingly, the perſons appointed to propagate it exerted all their endeavours againſt thoſe games and interludes, both as a part of the ſuperſtitious worſhip which they wanted to aboliſh, and as in themſelves ſubverſive of moral virtue, by the vices which they exhibited to imitation, heightened, and made ſtill more alluring by every incentive art, and pomp of expenſe.

For this purpoſe, reaſon, as well as Religion, ſupplied ready and powerful arguments; but, not content to wait for the ſlow effect of theſe, they ſtrove to prejudice thoſe whom they could not perſuade; and, to obviate the imitation of

their example, raiſed an abhorrence to the perſons of all concerned in ſuch repreſentations, caſting them off from the rites of religion, and declaring them unworthy both of the protection of the laws, and the common privileges of ſociety: A method, that in one reſpect defeated its own deſign; as it could never reclaim the offenders, however it might deter others from following their example.

Nor did they ſtop here. By an errour too common in the heat of argumentation, they concluded *from the abuſe, againſt the uſe* of the ſtage, and branded with the mark of reprobation all future actors, for the faults of the preſent.

CHAP. XI.

Continued. The common conſequence of exceſs of zeal. The profeſſed intent of the theatrical repreſentations defeated by this abſurd prejudice againſt actors. The vices againſt which this prejudice is levelled, in reality the effects of it; with the means for remedying this, and other abuſes.

HOWEVER the occaſion might there ſeem to juſtify this exceſs of zeal, when the cauſe ceaſed, the effect ſhould in reaſon have ceaſed alſo; and theſe general cenſures have been repealed. The ſuperſtitions which were the foundation of the firſt charge againſt the ſtage have been long aboliſhed; nor are the abſurdities and immoralities which gave offenſe to reaſon and virtue any longer practiſed there. On the contrary, the profeſſed intent of theatrical repreſentations at preſent is, to inſinuate inſtruction under the pleaſing appearance of entertainment, to encourage virtue by example, and inculcate the practice of it, by ſhowing the evils inſeparably attendant on vice; to regulate the paſſions, by diſplaying the danger of indulging them too far, and to put folly out of countenance, by holding it up to ridicule.

Now, as experience has proved the ſtage capable of anſwering theſe great ends, what can be more

injudicious than to attempt to bring it into diſrepute. What more unjuſt than to conſign to infamy thoſe who exert the fineſt powers of the human mind and body to accompliſh this end in the moſt pleaſing manner? Yet, ſuch is the abſurdity of man, that while perſons of the moſt exalted rank, and ſacred character, not only frequent the theatre, but alſo compoſe works to be repreſented on it, and evidently value themſelves more on poſſeſſing the abilities requiſite to compoſe them, than on all their other diſtinctions in life, thoſe from whoſe action ſuch compoſitions receive their force and beauty are held in diſrepute, and ſubject to the ſevereſt diſadvantages only for acting them. If it is no diſgrace *to write a play*, why ſhould it be any *to act it?*

It is true, the conſequences of this prejudice are not ſo ſevere here as in other countries, but ſtill they are ſuch as reaſon is aſhamed of. If actors are not *literally* excluded from the protection of the laws, they want ſupport to avail themſelves of that protection, as in the caſe which gave riſe to theſe reflexions! If they are not *actually (for literally they are!)* excluded from the rites of Religion, they want encouragement to participate in them!

I ſee you are ready to object to the utility of the ſtage, the faults in many of the performances exhibited upon it; and to juſtify the diſrepute affixed to the character of an actor, from the general

general immorality of their conduct in private life, as if it aroſe ſolely from their profeſſion. But a moment's reflexion would ſuggeſt anſwers to both theſe objections.

If there is any improper exhibition upon the ſtage, ſurely the blame ſhould fall on thoſe who have a legal power to prevent ſuch abuſe of the inſtitution of it! If the actors are immoral in their lives, ſhould it not be conſidered that they are prejudged from their profeſſion; and deprived of one of the ſtrongeſt inducements to virtue, that is, *reputation*, before they are proved to be guilty of vice.

The conſequence of this is, that too few enter into the profeſſion, till after they have loſt their reputation, or are driven by mere neceſſity; by which means they reflect that diſgrace upon it, which they are thought to ſuffer from it; and as they are ſenſible that they are precluded by this prejudice from all poſſibility of recovering or preſerving it by the moſt careful deportment, they become deſperate, and proceed till they even loſe the ſenſe of unavailing ſhame.

Whereas, if a different conduct was obſerved to them! if the brand of reprobation was taken off, and the profeſſion eſtabliſhed in that credit, which the abilities indiſpenſibly neceſſary to eminence in it deſerve, Genius would be no longer damped by apprehenſion of reproach: More perſons of good character would not

ſcruple going on the ſtage, as they could preſerve it there; nor vice ſeem to receive encouragement from publick favour, *becauſe from this circumſtance unhappily too often entangled with merit*; but the life of the actor would reflect the ſentiments of the poet, and enforce them to imitation by example.

Nor would it be difficult to work this important effect. All neceſſary, would be, to refuſe admiſſion on the ſtage to all, *notorious for vice of any kind*; to baniſh from it *ſuch as ſhould become ſo after, however eminent in their merits*; and *to ſupport the profeſſion by the civil power* againſt the tyranny of the mob, ſo that the lives and properties of all concerned in it ſhould be ſecure from ſuffering ſuch licentious outrage and injuſtice, as no other ſubjects are expoſed to; and as are equally a reproach and inſult to good government and common ſenſe.

Nor need it be apprehended that this would make them inſolent, or ſlacken their endeavours to pleaſe. Their very being depends on publick favour, the bare withholding of which is puniſhment ſufficiently ſevere; as ambition to acquire it will make them exert their utmoſt abilities, and always obſerve proper humility to the arbiters of their fate. They know that if they are neglected, they cannot live: On the contrary, it would enable them to riſe to greater merit in their art, as they would no longer be under the wretched neceſſity of proſtituting their

their own judgement, to pleaſe the groſs taſte of their tyrants.

Many other arguments might be alledged againſt this grievous, and ſhameful abuſe, but what I have ſaid is ſufficient to convince candid reaſon; and with prejudice it is in vain to argue.

CHAP. XII.

The ſyſtem of policy, by which CHRYSAL*'s maſter governed his ſtate. Account of his methods of parrying poets. The reaſon why ſo few new plays are acted. Enquiry into the preſent ſtate of genius. The general motives for writing plays preclude them from ſucceſs. Managers and Poets equally in fault, in their dealings with each other.*

THE day after this great affair was *thus equitably* ſettled, on the *treaſurer's* making up his week's account, I came into the poſſeſſion of the *manager*, who having ſome occaſion for money put *me* into his pocket.

The meaſures of my new maſter's government in his little empire were the ſtrongeſt burleſque on the policy of the world, the greateſt ſovereign in which had not more intrigues of *ſtate* to manage, than were continually carrying on about him, from the ambition, envy, and jealouſy of the ſeveral candidates for his *royal* favour.

But all this buſtle did not embarraſs him in the leaſt. He had the addreſs to *play off* one party againſt another; and *by never engaging himſelf particularly to any, was able to manage all.* A method, by the by, that might ſuggeſt an hint

hint not unuſeful to politicians in an higher ſphere.

But the part of his conduct that was moſt curious, and gave me the greateſt pleaſure, was his manner of *parrying* the attacks of the *authors* who were continually bringing him their works for repreſentation on the ſtage, of which I had an opportunity of ſeeing many ſtriking inſtances.

As it is evidently the intereſt of the manager of a theatre, to exhibit thoſe performances, whoſe merit is moſt likely to gain the approbation of the publick; and as no man who is capable of writing a piece proper for exhibition can be ſuppoſed to want judgement to know whether it has that merit, you may naturally think that there could not be much difficulty in the intercourſe between them; but human actions are not always to be judged of from the ſtrongeſt appearances of reaſon.

The repreſentation of a new piece neceſſarily puts the manager to ſome expenſe and much trouble. If you add to this, the natural anxiety about ſucceſs, *for merit is often rejected by caprice, or perſonal prejudice*, you will not wonder that he ſhould be cautious what he brings upon the ſtage; and prefer acting old ones, unattended with theſe inconveniencies, while the publick will bear the repetition, and does not peremptorily demand new.

This is the real reaſon, why ſo few new pieces are performed; and not any decline of

poetical genius to produce them; it being certain that there are as many good plays written now, as at any former point of time. But the matter is this. All the good ones of thoſe times lie together before you, and raiſe your opinion to the happy days which produced them: But if you conſider the long intervals between, and the innumerable bad ones which appeared along with them, but are now loſt in the wreck of time, you will find that you have not ſo great reaſon to complain of the preſent decline of genius, as you may have imagined.

I do not by this mean, that every one who pretends to write is poſſeſſed of that genius; or that all the pieces offered to the ſtage are proper for repreſentation. On the contrary, many who want every qualification indiſpenſible to ſucceſs in ſuch attempts, make them every day in defiance of reaſon; and ſtrive to obtrude upon the publick works which are a reproach to common ſenſe.

The motives of this are obvious. Whenever a man is at a loſs how to ſpend his time, or wants to raiſe a little money, down he ſits without more ado, and writes a play. The conſequence of this is, that the very reaſons which made him turn poet neceſſarily preclude him from ſucceſs. *Idleneſs* prevents that care, that *limæ labor*, which alone can make a performance proper for publick repreſentation; and *diſtreſs* depreſſes the

the imagination; and hinders its riſing to that *happy boldneſs*, which is the eſſence of poetry.

It appears from hence, that if the managers of theatres from intereſted motives are often to blame for rejecting *good* pieces; poets (or thoſe who would be thought ſuch) are much oftener culpable for offering them bad ones. The difference of opinion unavoidable on this account occaſions the difficulty in their intercourſe. But in this the conteſt is not equal. The word of the manager is deciſive; while the poet has nothing left, but to vent his reſentment in unavailing (and often unjuſt) complaints, and abuſe, in which thoſe who have leaſt right are always loudeſt; for enamoured with the beauty of their own offspring, like the ape in the fable, they throw dirt at all who preſume to find fault with it.

But ſevere as it muſt be to ſuffer this, it is not the greateſt difficulty the manager has to encounter with them. Not ſatisfied with the civil refuſal of affected delays and excuſes, they muſt have a direct anſwer, which they controvert with all their power, and oblige him to ſupport by ſuch arguments as muſt give him pain, if he has either politeneſs or good-nature; though, after all, inſtead of convincing them, he only gets their's and their friends ill-will, and arms all their tongues againſt him.

It is not to be doubted but the *evaſions* which managers uſe to *ſhift off good* pieces are as groſsly offenſive to moral propriety, truth, and candour, as the arguments of authors in defenſe of *bad* ones can poſſibly be to reaſon; but as I did not happen to be witneſs to any inſtances of them, I ſhall confine my account to the latter.

CHAP.

CHAP. XIII.

CHRYSAL's maſter ſits in judgement on ſome pieces offered to him. A poet of faſhion enters. The arguments by which he ſupports his work againſt the objections of CHRYSAL's *maſter, who makes ſome curious dramatical ſtrictures. The poet, driven from his laſt retreat, the intereſt of his great friends, by the common cant of the houſe's being* FULL *for the ſeaſon, departs in a rage, denouncing their reſentment, which* CHRYSAL's *maſter ſhows his reaſon not to fear the effects of.*

THE important morning after I came into the poſſeſſion of the manager was big with the fate of many a poetical performance, the authors of which were appointed to come there for his deciſive anſwer.

Accordingly, as ſoon as he had breakfaſted, he repaired to his tribunal, where he had been waited for, ſome time, by one of thoſe aſpiring geniuſes, who ſacrifice the ſolid happineſs of independence to the vain ambition *of being well with the great*; ſubmitting to their capricious humours for the honour of a nod in publick places, or an invitation to their tables; to enhance their welcome at which, and conſume time they know not how to make better uſe of, they fall upon this wiſe expedient of turning poet.

When

When they had gone through all the formalities of polite addreſs, and taken their ſeats with proper ceremony, the poet opened the buſineſs. "Well, Sir (ſaid he, with a ſmile of ſelf-complacence) you have peruſed that trifle! what "is your opinion? Heh! don't you think it "will do?"

"Sir (anſwered my maſter, with the ſmooth "ſimper of a courtier) you do it injuſtice by "calling it a trifle! the piece has a great deal "of merit; and reads very prettily in many "places; but I fear it is not quite ſo proper "for the ſtage!"——

—"How, Sir! not proper for the ſtage! "pray, Sir, where does the impropriety lie? Se-"veral perſons of the firſt rank have read it, "and found no ſuch thing. *His grace* ſaid, it "abounded with the *vis comica*. Lord *Taſtly* "was charmed with the *Attick ſalt*; and *Sir* "*Courtly* admired the elegance of the diction. "Pray, Sir, where then can the impropriety "lie? They are allowed to be judges."——

"—Pardon me, Sir, I do not preſume to "call their judgement in queſtion, in the leaſt. "But—a—"

—"And why, then, ſhould you heſitate to re-"ceive it? They will ſupport it with all "their intereſt."——

"That, Sir, I do not doubt. But—ſtill, "Sir—the town"——

"—The

" —The town, Sir! and pray what of the " town? Is the judgement of the town to be " put in competition with their's?"——

" No, Sir! by no means! but ſtill the town " is a very formidable and arbitrary judge; and " will not admit its authority to be diſputed in " ſuch matters as this."——

—" And, pray, good Sir, what objections can " the judicious town, or you, its learned advo- " cate, make!"——

" Sir, you impoſe a very diſagreeable taſk " upon me! I had much rather be excuſed."—

" I do not in the leaſt doubt that, Sir; but " my friends inſiſt upon a direct anſwer. Either " receive the play, or ſay why you will not."—

—" Sir, I ſhould be very ſorry to give of- " fenſe to any gentleman; but ſince you inſiſt " upon my opinion, Do not you think, Sir, " the plot is too—too—too domeſtick? Are " not the intrigues and tricks of ſervants too " low a ſubject for polite entertainment?"——

—" How, Sir! have you any objection to " ſervants? Do not they make a principal part " in all our modern comedies? Are the *Jere-* " *my's*, and *Scrubs*, and *Philis's*, and a thou- " ſand others, to be rejected becauſe they are " ſervants?"——

—" No, Sir! but conſider they are not the " principal characters; nor does the plot turn " upon them. They come in, as it were, by " accident; and, indeed, except in the in-

" ſtances

" ſtances you have mentioned, and, perhaps, a " very few more, they had much better be left " out. It ſhows a groſſneſs of taſte to ſtoop to " them for entertainment."——

—" And do not I introduce the maſters and " miſtreſſes too, as well as the ſervants? Are there " not country ſquires, and town fops, and fine " ladies?"——

" Yes, Sir, you do introduce them, but in " a ſubordinate light; and merely to be the " dupes of their ſervants, without any buſineſs, " or importance of their own."——

—" And, pray, Sir, in what other light do " moſt maſters appear? Ha! ha! ha!—Well, " then, it ſeems all your objections are to the " fable. You have nothing to ſay againſt the " ſentiments and diction."——

—" The ſentiments, Sir, may be very pro- " per, and the diction ſuited to them; but you " muſt be ſenſible that the former objection af- " fects them all equally. The characters are " too low; and the ſentiments and diction con- " ſequently too coarſe."——

" Sir—Sir—Sir—I ſhall not enter into any " further arguments with you. *His Grace* bids " me tell you, he inſiſts upon your receiving " it, or giving him ſuch reaſons as he ſhall " think ſatisfactory, which muſt be very diffe- " rent from thoſe inſignificant cavils."——

—" His Grace need not exert his authority " to influence my obedience. The leaſt hint

" of

" of his pleaſure were ſufficient; but unluckily " I am engaged for the whole ſeaſon; quite " *full.*"——

——" *Full!* why did you not tell me ſo at " firſt?"——

——" Becauſe you inſiſted on having my opi- " nion."——

" Very well, Sir! I ſhall let his Grace, and " all my friends, know how you have behaved. " Let me have the play! impertinent, inſolent, " ignorant puppy;" muttered he, as he went out.

" So (ſaid my maſter, as ſoon as he was gone) " I have now made him my enemy for ever. " As for his *noble friends*, they are above trou- " bling themſelves about any thing of the kind, " and give him leave to mention their names, " only to get rid of his importunity."

CHAP.

CHAP. XIV.

Continuation. CHRYSAL's *maſter rejects the work of a poet for his ignorance of the laws of the drama. More dramatical ſtrictures. The poet modeſtly inſiſts, that his play is refuſed only becauſe it wants the intereſt of the great; and goes off in a huff. Another poet repulſed for his attachment to the laws of the drama. Arguments againſt theſe laws. The poet refuſes to conform to the preſent taſte; and makes an appeal. One more poet refuſed, only for wanting every poetical talent. Remarks on ſomething that affects more than care to own it.* CHRYSAL *changes his ſervice, on an occaſion not common.*

THE laſt poet was ſcarce down ſtairs, when a footman *announced* the enterance of another.

My maſter did not think it neceſſary to obſerve ſo much ceremony with him, as he had done with the former, but told him directly, that he could not receive his piece.

Such a ſentence ſtruck the poet *all of an heap.* He was unable to ſpeak for ſome moments; but recovering himſelf at length, "Not receive it, "Sir! (ſaid he:) you ſurpriſe me. Pray, Sir, "why ſo?"——

"I am very loth to find fault, Sir (anſwered "my maſter;) but you ſeem to be utterly unac- "quainted with all *the laws of the drama.*"——

——"The

—" The laws of the drama! they are but " art; I write from nature. Theſe laws have " been long laid aſide. *Shakeſpear* wrote with- " out laws."——

—" So much the worſe. But he is a dan- " gerous example to imitate. The local, tem- " porary laws of the ancient drama are laid " aſide, it is true, but not the immutable, ge- " neral laws of propriety and reaſon. Your fa- " ble is unconnected, improbable, and unaf- " fecting."——

—" How, Sir! unaffecting! Can the fall " of a mighty empire be ſaid to be unaffect- " ing?"——

—" No, Sir! but the deſcription of it moſt " certainly may, if not drawn with judgement " and force. And then your characters are ill- " ſupported; and your ſentiments and language " loſt in the clouds."——

—" What, Sir! can the ſentiments of Kings " and Princes be too ſublime?"——

—" There is a wide difference between " being ſublime, and ſwollen out of na- " ture."——

—" But what objection can you make to " the language? Is it not raiſed with *epi-* " *thets*, and *metaphors*, and all the figures of " poetry?"——

—" Good Sir! poetical figures in poor lan- " guage look like embroidery on a blanket.

" They

" They only make its poverty ridiculous. " Beſide, your *ſtalking in their ſtilts*, betrays " you into many a ſtumble in the dirt. Your " figures frequently fly in the face of common " ſenſe, and break through every rule of gram- " mar."——

—" Well, Sir! I ſhall conſider of theſe " particulars. The great objection I have heard " made to modern plays is, their want of buſi- " neſs: But this can never be charged to mine. " There is a *ghoſt*, and a battle; and a king " dethroned. Buſineſs enough and enough, I " am ſure."——

—" Ghoſts and battles, Sir, it is true, are " ſometimes introduced with ſucceſs; but then " it muſt be by a maſter in the art, elſe they " have a contrary effect."——

—" I apprehend that the aim of tragedy is to " work upon the paſſions. In this, I believe, " you cannot ſay I have failed—The diſtreſs is " truely great."——

—" Diſtreſs, when out of character, loſes " the appearance of reality, and becomes ridi- " culous. A king in an alms-houſe, and a " queen begging from door to door, are images " which ſink into a burleſque."——

—" It is very well, Sir! you may ſay what " you pleaſe, but I am ſatisfied it is not want " of merit in my play that makes you refuſe it. " You daily act much worſe. If it had been

" recommended

" recommended to you by ſome lord, you would " have found none of theſe faults; but merit " may ſtarve without intereſt to ſupport it, now-" a-days. This is fine encouragement to ge-" nius, truely; and the publick is like to be " well entertained while ſuch men have it in " their power to refuſe every thing that does not " happen to pleaſe themſelves."——

Saying this, he ſnatched up his play, leaving my maſter to pleaſe himſelf with the proſpect of being *criticiſed upon in a news-paper*, and pulled to pieces in a ſcurrilous pamphlet.

He had not time to indulge theſe reflexions long, when another of his clients attended his levee.

As ſoon as he was ſeated " I have read over " your work with great care (ſaid my maſter) " and am ſorry to ſay, I think it improper for " the ſtage."——

—" Pray, Sir, why ſo? (anſwered the poet, " with an air of importance.) It is written " ſtrictly according to the rules of the drama; " and enriched with the ſublimeſt ſentiments of " the ancients."——

—" Sir, I am ſenſible of its merits as well " as of the great learning of the authour: But " the taſte of the times requires entertainment " of a different kind."——

" Surely, compliance with a vitiated taſte " will not juſtify the breach of rules, taken

" originally

" originally from nature, and eſtabliſhed for ſo " many ages.——

—" I neither diſpute the original juſtice, nor " the antiquity of them: But I apprehend that " the latter, in a great meaſure, deſtroys the " preſent force of the former. The cuſtoms of " mankind, the part of nature that comes with- " in the province of the drama, are ſo changed " ſince the eſtabliſhment of thoſe rules, that it " would be moſt abſurd to exact obedience to " them now. Beſide, may it not be ſaid, with- " out violation to the reſpect due to antiquity, " that experience, in a great length of time, " may have made many improvements in thoſe " rules. The infancy of every art is weak."——

—" But, whatever change may have hap- " pened in the cuſtoms of the world, truth ſtill " remains the ſame, and the genuine ſentiments " of nature can not diſpleaſe."——

—" Very true! but ſtill they may not always " be received with equal pleaſure, in the ſame " garb. Unimpaſſioned ſentiment, however " juſt and ſublime, works not the effects de- " ſigned by the drama, whoſe aim is to con- " vey inſtruction and pleaſure at the ſame " time, by an immediate addreſs to the paſ- " ſions."——

—" Is it poſſible, that you can be an advo- " cate for the irregular monſters, which at pre- " ſent diſhonour the ſtage?"——

—" As

" As for irregularity, I look upon it to be " but an imaginary defect. Though even if it " were otherwiſe, I am the ſervant of the pub- " lick, and obliged to find entertainment for " their taſte, be it what it will. If you would " but conform"——

" No, Sir! that I never will, againſt rea- " ſon and the ancients. I ſee you are preju- " diced, and, therefore, ſhall not argue with " you any longer. But I ſhall not acquieſce in " ſilence. I will publiſh the performance, with- " out being diſcouraged by your refuſal, and " appeal to the judgement of the learned."——

He then marched off, with a ſtately pace, and my maſter looking after him, " There again " (ſaid he, ſhrugging his ſhoulders) I ſhall now " have the ghoſts of *Sophocles* and *Ariſtotle*, and " all the doughty ancients, raiſed to haunt " me."——

As he ſaid this, a perſon entered, whoſe whole appearance ſpoke diſtreſs. He approached my maſter bowing lowly, and trembling with anxiety as he ſpoke: " I have made bold to wait upon " you, Sir! (ſaid he) but, if you are not at " leiſure, will call another time."——

" Pray, Sir, ſit down; (replied my maſter, " with a ſmile of encouragement) I have " looked over your work, and am concerned " that it is not in my power to receive it; as " I ſhould be ſincerely glad to ſerve you. But " in this, it is not poſſible. I muſt be plain

" with you—You ſeem to want every poetical " talent."——

" I thought, Sir (returned the poet, ſcarce " able to collect ſpirits enough to ſpeak to him) " that the buſineſs of tragedy was, to work " upon the paſſions! I depended entirely on " the diſtreſs."——

—" Very true, Sir! But there are other " paſſions beſide pity to be applied to; nor is " poverty a proper diſtreſs to work upon them. " Severe as it is to be felt, it affects but little in " repreſentation. The upper ranks of life know " not what it is; and thoſe who do, are de- " ſirous to keep the thought at a diſtance; and " conceal a knowledge they are aſhamed of. " The mind muſt be properly prepared to feel " for another. The deſcription of a famine " would affect but little after a feaſt."

This came too home to the unhappy poet. He burſt into tears; and was departing without being able to make a reply. My maſter felt his diſtreſs; though he could not receive his play, as he knew that an audience would pay no regard to his circumſtances, nor give up an evening's entertainment to relieve an author's indigence; and waiting on him to the door, ſlipped a couple of guineas into his hand; when it fell to my lot to change my ſervice.

I had never experienced my own influence on the human heart ſo ſtrongly as on this occaſion. The poet kiſſed the hand of his benefactor in a rapture

rapture too big for utterance; and forgetting, for a moment, all his diſtreſſes, went to a coffee-houſe, and *changed* me to pay for his breakfaſt; "where I was immediately *borrowed* at "the bar, by an officer, who was going to dine "with his general, and wanted money to give "his ſervants." *Vol.* I.—*Page* 122.

CHAP. XV.

CHRYSAL's *maſter engages in a genteel amour, a delicate way of refining pleaſure. His miſtreſs perſuades him that ſhe has poiſoned him and herſelf. His ſituation on hearing this. Striking proofs of medical ſkill, with the advantage of a regular courſe of practice. An exemplary inſtance of charity and forgiveneſs diverts the doctors' attention to the murtheress.*

(CHRYSAL, *after having ſeen ſeveral ſtriking ſcenes, in the courſe of an extenſive circulation, is at length carried to a horſe-race, where he is initiated in ſome of the myſteries of the turf.)*

"It was on a ſporting bet, on one of the "by-matches, that I was *loſt* that evening to "the nobleman, as I ſaid, in whoſe poſſeſſion I "happened to remain till the end of the meeting." *Vol.* II.—*Page* 96.

As it was late in the evening when my maſter arrived in *London*, he reſolved to indulge himſelf, for that night, in the embraces of a tender-hearted female, whom he *picked up* in the ſtreet (for he was no way nice in his amours) as he walked from the inn where he alighted to his own houſe, in order to ſtretch his legs.

Nothing more than common occurrences paſſed upon this occaſion. When his lordſhip had made his miſtreſs *nobly* drunk, *by the way of refining*

fining his pleaſure, the delicate pair went lovingly to bed together, where awaking about midnight, he was ſurpriſed to find her cold and lifeleſs in his arms. After ſome fruitleſs efforts to move her, he ſtarted out of bed in a fright, and called up all his ſervants; who, perceiving that ſhe was not actually dead, took ſuch pains to recover her, that ſhe at length opened her eyes, and ſtaring wildly around her for ſome moments, "Where "am I? (ſaid ſhe.) Are theſe the regions of "the damned? For thither only can ſuch ſelf-"murthering wretches, as I am, go."—Then ſeeing his lordſhip, whoſe curioſity had brought him to the bedſide, "And are you dead, too!" (continued ſhe, wringing her hands, and weeping moſt paſſionately.) "Oh! why did I not con-"fine my rage to myſelf? Why did I add your "murther to my own, to plunge my ſoul ſtill "deeper in perdition?"——

This ſurpriſed all preſent. The ſervants, who were indifferent whether it was true or falſe, imagined ſhe only raved, and doubled their efforts to bring her to herſelf, ſoothing her with expreſſions of tenderneſs, and telling her ſhe was not dead, but would ſoon be very well: but my maſter was too nearly concerned to think ſo coolly of the matter.

"What is that you ſay? (ſaid he, trembling "in horrour.) What is it you ſay about mur-"ther? There is no one murthered here."—

" How! (anſwered ſhe, fixing her eyes eager-
" ly upon him.) Is it poſſible, that I am ſtill
" alive? And that you alſo live? It cannot
" be! The poiſon which I ſwallowed this night,
" and in which you ſhared too largely, cannot
" have miſſed of its effect. But, ſoft! its ope-
" ration now begins! that pang!—oh!—that
" pang beſpeaks the near approach of death!—
" O mercy!—O cry for mercy on your ſins!"—

" What poiſon? (interrupted he, terrified
" almoſt to diſtraction.) What poiſon have
" I ſhared in? Speak! tell me directly, or"—

" Spare your threats, my lord," (ſaid ſhe, with a compoſure in her looks and manner that perſuaded every one preſent ſhe was in her ſenſes) " ſpare your threats to a wretch, whom death " will ſoon deliver from your power; and for-
" give a crime that proceeded from deſpair.
" Wearied of the miſeries of this life, I this
" night reſolved to put an end to it, and for
" that purpoſe, though on another pretence,
" procured a doſe of poiſon from a chemiſt's ap-
" prentice, who, on giving it to me, ſaid, it
" was ſufficient to kill twenty of the ſtrongeſt
" men alive: and this poiſon did I take an op-
" portunity to put into the laſt bottle of wine,
" when you went out of the room, determined
" to ſacrifice one man to my revenge for the in-
" juries I had received from the ſex: though,
" after I had done it, my heart relented; but
" you inſiſted on my drinking, and fear of your

" reſentment

" resentment prevented me from making a dis-
" covery, that would have saved us both from this
" unhappy"——At these words, she fell into convulsions, so strong, that every one who saw her thought she was really in the agonies of death.

The situation of my master, at this sight, may be easily conceived. He instantly felt every pain that poison could produce; and, falling on the floor, roared aloud in anguish of mind and body, lamenting his untimely fate, and confessing all the sins of his life to the servants who stood around him.

As soon as they had raised him up, and carried him into another room, a dawn of hope arose at his finding he did not immediately die. " What! (exclaimed he) is every one com-
" bined against me? Am I to perish for want
" of assistance? Will nobody even call me a
" physician? Perhaps, I might yet be saved,
" were proper means applied! Will nobody
" call me a physician?"——

On his saying this, every one was running to obey him, the sight of which threw him into new distress. " O wretch that I am! (ex-
" claimed he) and so I am to be left alone!
" to perish for want even of a drop of water!
" Is it not enough for some of you to go; and
" not all to desert me in this base, this barbarous
" manner?"——This seemed to restore them to their senses; and, accordingly, while some

went to call the doctors, the reſt ſtaid to take care of him.

Where the carrion is, the crows will ſoon be gathered together. He was immediately ſurrounded by half the meagre faces of the faculty (for, as he had not named any one in particular, his ſervants, to ſhow their care, had ſummoned all they knew of) who taking the account he gave them of his being poiſoned for truth, proceeded inſtantly to practiſe upon him every method they had ever heard of being uſed in ſuch a caſe, in hopes that ſome one of them might take effect. He was cupped, bled, and bliſtered; vomited, clyſtered, and purged, in the ſpace of two hours; the doctors ſagaciouſly diſcovering new ſymptoms of the poiſon, every new remedy they tried.

When they found that, beyond their expectations, he had ſtrength enough to out-live all this, they put him into bed, and covering him up warm, to take a ſweat, comforted him with hopes of his recovery, in conſequence of their ſkill and care.

While they waited *patiently* for this important criſis, ſome of them happened to think of the poor murtheress, who had been neglected all this time, and now lay in a ſwoon, the convulſions having gone off, as her ſtrength failed.

On hearing her name mentioned, his lordſhip, to ſhow his Chriſtian charity, and prove the ſincerity of the repentance and amendment which he

he vowed in caſe his life ſhould be mercifully ſpared, deſired that they would do ſomething for the unhappy creature, if ſhe was ſtill alive. This was ſufficient to attach their compaſſion and care. They anſwered with one voice, that it was a pity to let her periſh, without even attempting to ſave her, and praiſing his lordſhip's goodneſs, prepared to try ſome experiments upon her alſo, if only to do ſomething for their fee.

CHAP. XVI.

The recovery of the murthereſs opens a new ſcene. She clears up the myſtery, leſs to the ſatisfaction of the doctors, than of their noble patient, who rewards her liberally for her good news; and ſends them off without their errand. Reflexions on ſome genteel matters. CHRYSAL *changes his ſervice.*

THEIR practice upon this new ſubject, however, was cut ſhort by a ſucceſs more ſpeedy than they deſired; their firſt operation of bleeding bringing her directly to herſelf.

As ſoon as ſhe perceived what had been done, and recovered ſtrength to ſpeak, "Good "God, (ſaid ſhe) what is the meaning of "this? Who can have been ſo inhuman as "to bleed me, when it is known to be ruin, in "my diſorder?"——

"In your diſorder!" (ſaid one of the doctors, with a contemptuous frown.) "What "diſorder? Have you not poiſoned yourſelf? "And what is ſtill worſe, his lordſhip alſo; "who now lies in the ſame deſperate condition "with you, and has from his unmerited goodneſs "directed us to take this care of you; though "if we can ſave you from this death, it muſt "be to ſuffer one more ignominious."

"I poiſon

"I poiſon myſelf!" (interrupted ſhe, raiſing herſelf up in the bed.) "I poiſon his "lordſhip! What can you mean by this! I "underſtand you not; and am innocent, even "in thought, of any ſuch crimes. Explain "yourſelf, therefore; and do not ſport with the "miſery of a wretched creature, who has more "real diſtreſſes than ſhe is able to bear, without "the addition of imaginary guilt."——

This amazed them all. They ſtood looking at each other for ſome moments, rapped in reflexions, not the moſt pleaſing, on the conſequences which might attend their precipitation in treating his lordſhip in the manner they had done, in caſe what ſhe ſaid ſhould prove true. At length, on her repeating her entreaties, one of them condeſcended to inform her of every thing that had paſſed, dwelling particularly on the deſperate condition his lordſhip had been in, and the various methods they had uſed to relieve him.

Weak and diſpirited as you muſt ſuppoſe her to have been, ſhe was ſcarce able to refrain from laughter at this account. "A deſperate con-"dition he muſt be in now, indeed (ſaid ſhe) "whatever he was in before! but, if you will "give me leave to ſlip on my gown, and go to "him, I'll ſoon complete his cure."

This was a ſtep ſo contrary to all rules of practice, that they could not permit it. On the contrary, one of them obſerving the impropriety

of liſtening to the ravings of a perſon whoſe head muſt certainly be diſtracted by the effects of the poiſon, they all took the hint, and were actually going to hold her down by force, in order to proceed in their experiments upon her, which you may think would not have been the more merciful, for what ſhe had juſt ſaid.

But ſhe was delivered from this diſcipline, by the appearance of his lordſhip, who on one of his ſervants carrying him the pleaſing news of what ſhe ſaid, had found ſtrength enough to run to her, and throwing himſelf on the bed, "O my "deareſt girl!" (exclaimed he, claſping his arms around her neck) "am I not then a dead man? "Tell me! tell me the truth directly! am I "not a dead man?"——

His haggard looks, and the bandages and flannels, in which he was wrapped all over, convinced her of the truth of what the doctors had told her he had ſuffered. Shocked at the thought, ſhe held up her hands in a ſupplicating poſture, and imploring his pardon for what ſhe had been the involuntary cauſe of, informed him that ſhe was ſubject to fits, which attacked her with double violence whenever ſhe drank to any exceſs, as his lordſhip had compelled her to do that night, much, he muſt have been ſenſible, againſt her inclination, had ſhe dared to refuſe him; and that when ſhe was in thoſe fits, which laſted till the effects of the liquor went off, ſhe was apt to rave, and ſpeak every extravagance

travagance and inconſiſtency that could come into a diſordered head.

The manner in which ſhe ſpoke left not the leaſt room for doubt. All his fears were inſtantly removed, his joy at which obliterated the remembrance of every thing he had ſuffered in mind and body, and he not only forgave her, but alſo made her a handſome preſent, in recompenſe for her happy news.

But his doctors met with a very different treatment. He reviled them in the ſevereſt terms, for their ignorance and preſumption in putting him to ſuch torture, and tearing his conſtitution by ſuch violent means, before they were certain of his ailment; and without permitting them to alledge in their vindication his aſſertions of what he felt, and intreaties not to leave any thing unattempted, that they thought might poſſibly relieve him, ordered them to be turned out of doors, without giving them a farthing for all their trouble

I have ſeen that you were ſurpriſed at his lordſhip's indelicacy, and diſregard to his health, in having an amour with a creature in ſo low a ſtate of infamy and wretchedneſs, as to walk the ſtreets to offer herſelf to caſual proſtitution; as well as at her expreſſing herſelf in a manner ſo much above her appearance and circumſtances. But the leaſt acquaintance with the world would eaſily account for both.

When

When once a woman falls from chaſtity, the characteriſtick virtue of her ſex, the deſcent to this loweſt degree of human miſery is natural, and ſeldom, very ſeldom, fails to come of courſe. The kept-miſtreſs, who this day ſhines in brocade and jewels, and rattles about in her chariot, will in a few months ſpend the night in the ſtreets, for want of an habitation to hide her head, and without clothes to ſhelter her from the inclemencies of the weather, when the novelty that firſt recommended her is worn off; *for no proſperity that is not eſtabliſhed on virtue can laſt.* Their's indeed, is of all the moſt fleeting; the vice which is their ſupport affecting their own conduct by example, and making them laviſh profuſely what they get from profuſion.

Such had been the caſe of this female. She had been entitled by birth and education to better hopes; but vice had blaſted all, and left her only the reflexion of what ſhe might have been, to aggravate her preſent wretchedneſs.

As to him! his health poſſibly was in a ſtate not worthy of regard! and for his delicacy! the indiſcriminate, vague intercourſe of the ſexes effectually deſtroys that, as well as the ſentimental attachment, which refines the deſire of rational beings, and diſtinguiſhes it from the groſs appetite of brute animals, ſo that in general nothing further than the grattification of that appetite is now ſought; and as that can be effected by any one object, as well as another, whether

whether it is found in a palace or a brothel makes no difference with thoſe who profeſs themſelves men of pleaſure. The ſex is all they ſeek, without regard to any qualifications; and conſequently, when their appetites are gratified, they deſert the objects of them with the ſame indifference, as they took them.

But to return to my maſter. It was ſome time, as you may imagine, before he recovered the effects of this affair; but I remained not with him ſo long. The doctors, in revenge for the treatment they had met with, blazed it abroad, with the addition of every ridiculous circumſtance they could invent. This brought all his acquaintances to have a laugh at him upon the occaſion; to one of whom he *loſt* me that afternoon on a bet, at a race between two of the *maggots* which they found in the nuts they cracked after dinner.

CHAP.

CHAP. XVII.

CHRYSAL's maſter goes to be admitted into an extraordinary Society. Some reflexions not ſuited to the taſte of the times. Riſe of this ſociety. A deſcription of a monaſtery, with an account of its members, and of ſome of its rules.

THE next morning after I came into the poſſeſſion of my new maſter, he ſet out upon a party of pleaſure of a moſt extraordinary nature. This was, to be admitted into a ſociety, formed of a number of perſons of the firſt diſtinction, in burleſque imitation of religious ſocieties, which are inſtituted in other countries.

I have already told you, that I ſhall not give any opinion in religious matters. But, whether the original inſtitution of ſuch ſocieties was right or not, as the motive of them was the worſhip of the Deity, any attempt to turn them into ridicule moſt certainly muſt be wrong; the mind of man ſeldom being acute or attentive enough to diſtinguiſh between matters which to appearance are ſo intimately connected as the mode of worſhip, and the object of it; but generally involving either in the diſregard affecting the other. In the preſent inſtance, indeed, the diſregard was deſignedly levelled at both alike.

To give you a proper notion of the ſcene in which my maſter was going to act a capital part,

part, it is neceſſary to trace the whole from its original.

A perſon of a flighty imagination, and who poſſeſſed a fortune that enabled him to purſue thoſe flights, cloyed with common pleaſures, and ambitious of diſtinguiſhing himſelf among his companions, had reſolved to try if he could not ſtrike out ſomething new, that ſhould at the ſame time pleaſe his own taſte, and do honour to his genius.

The mere gratifications of ſenſe, in their utmoſt extent, not anſwering his deſign, he had recourſe to the aſſiſtance of imagination to enhance them. The great *butt*, againſt which men of pleaſure play off all their wit, is religion. Their reaſons for a practice ſo groſs are obvious. As the voice of conſcience will ſometimes intrude upon them ſo as to pall their higheſt pleaſures in the very moment of enjoyment, their firſt endeavour is to ſilence it, which they find, by experience, cannot be done ſo effectually by any other method as this of taking off the reſpect paid to religion, from which conſcience borrows the terrours that make its admonitions ſo unwelcome. Beſides, they think it ſhows their ſuperiority over the reſt of mankind, to laugh at what they are afraid of; as it is alſo convenient for their character of wit, to exert it on topicks where it is ſafe from being rivalled by men of real underſtanding.

Theſe

Theſe weighty conſiderations determined him to ſeaſon his ſcheme as high as he could with impiety, in order to make it be the better reliſhed. Accordingly, after due deliberation on a matter of ſuch moment, he at length hit upon a plan that pleaſed him.

In the middle of a large lake upon his eſtate, there was an iſland, the natural beauties of whoſe ſituation had been heightened by every improvement of art. On this iſland he erected a building, exactly on the model of the monaſteries which he had ſeen in other countries; and, to make the reſemblance complete, there was not a vice that he had ever heard imputed to the inhabitants of them, for practiſing which he did not make proviſion in his. The cellars were ſtored with the choiceſt wines; the larders with the delicacies of every climate; and the *cells* were fitted up for all the purpoſes of laſciviouſneſs, for which proper objects were alſo provided.

Thus far the ridicule, however criminal in itſelf, may ſeem to have been deſigned only againſt thoſe ſocieties of human inſtitution: but it was beneath his genius and ſpirit to ſtop here. Nothing leſs would ſatisfy him than to attack the very eſſentials of the religion eſtabliſhed by the laws of his country, and acknowledged by every ſerious perſon in it to be divine.

For this pious purpoſe, when every thing was prepared for their reception, his next care was

to

to find a fraternity proper for the place. But in this his rank and courſe of life made him not long at a loſs. He ſelected from among his intimates a number equal to that of thoſe who had been at the firſt choſen to inculcate the religion which he deſigned to ridicule, whoſe names they aſſumed, as he with equal modeſty and piety did that of the divine author of it: and, to ſupply any decreaſe in this number by death or deſertion from the terrours of reflexion, he inſtituted an inferior order of as many more, choſen alſo with the greateſt caution and regard to the latitude of their principles, their fortunes, and mirthful accompliſhments.

The probationary office of theſe latter was to attend upon their ſuperiours in the celebration of their myſteries, which were all performed in the chapel of the monaſtery, where no other ſervants were ever permitted to enter, on the moſt common occaſion, as the very *decorations* of it would, in a great meaſure, have betrayed their ſecrets; the ceiling being covered with emblems and devices too groſs to require explanation to the meaneſt capacity; and the walls painted with the portraits of thoſe whoſe names and characters they aſſumed, repreſented in attitudes and actions horrible to imagination.

Nor was their care to keep their myſteries impenetrably ſecret confined to this excluſion of common ſervants. The diffidence of conſcious

ſcious guilt made them even diſtruſt each other; till bound to ſecrecy by oaths and imprecations, receiving their force from the religion thus abuſed by them: an abſurdity common among men aſſociated for the moſt flagitious purpoſes.

But, ſtrong as the power of ſuperſtition is over weak and wicked minds (for nothing but the groſſeſt ſuperſtition could make them think oaths in ſuch circumſtances binding!) their ſecrecy was ſecured by a ſtill ſtronger motive, which was fear.

They were ſenſible that even ſuſpicion of ſuch vices would for ever exclude them from the ſociety of all thoſe, whom, in deſpite of themſelves, they could not help holding in reſpect; and that ſo outrageous an inſult upon the laws was liable to puniſhment from the ſecular power, though they might by their intereſt evade the direct effects of which, yet the imputation would make them ſo obnoxious to the people in general, that they could no longer hope to enjoy any of the lucrative employments of the ſtate, if their reſentment did not ariſe ſtill higher, and make them take that puniſhment into their own hands! and theſe fears prevented their ſecrets being divulged even by ſuch as had reſolution enough to deſert the ſociety; as they imagined the ſtain could never be ſo effectually expunged, as to ſecure them from thoſe conſequences.

The

The rites of this ſociety, and the ceremonies obſerved upon the admiſſion into it, will be beſt explained by the account of what I ſaw my maſter perform on this occaſion; when he was a candidate for the higher order, having already ſerved his noviciate in the lower.

CHAP.

CHAP. XVIII.

CHRYSAL's maſter arrives at the monaſtery. The manner of his being admitted into the ſociety. Character of his competitor. The method he took to revenge the ſociety's injuſtice in preferring CHRYSAL's *maſter to him. The mirth of the company diſturbed by the enterance of* THE DEVIL, *juſt as he was invoked by* CHRYSAL's *maſter. The effect of ſuch a viſitor upon the company. The* DEVIL *fixes upon* CHRYSAL's *maſter in particular, and makes him ſqueak.*

IT was about four o'clock in the afternoon when my maſter arrived at the verge of the lake, where he no ſooner made the concerted ſignal, than a boat was ſent to ferry him over.

On his landing on the iſland, he went to the monaſtery, where he found the ſociety juſt ſitting down to dinner, at which he took his place among them. When they had made a ſhort meal, and drank their ſpirits up to a proper pitch, they retired to their reſpective cells, to prepare for the ſolemity they were going to celebrate. My maſter, then clad in a milk white robe of the fineſt linen, that flowed looſely round him, repaired, at the tolling of a bell, to the chapel, the ſcene of all their myſterious rites, and knocking gently thrice at the door, it was opened to him, to the ſound of ſoft and ſolemn muſick.

On

On his enterance he made a moſt profound obeiſance, and advancing ſlowly toward a table that ſtood againſt the wall in the upper end of the chapel, as ſoon as he came to the rails, by which it was ſurrounded, he fell upon his knees, and making a profeſſion of his principles, nearly in the words, but with the moſt groſs perverſion of the ſenſe of the articles of faith of the religion eſtabliſhed in the country, demanded admiſſion within the rails, the peculiar ſtation of the upper order, where the ſuperiour and eleven of the fraternity (the twelfth place was vacant, and now to be filled up) ſtood arrayed in the habits of thoſe whoſe names and characters they profaned by their aſſumption.

When he had finiſhed, another candidate advanced in the like manner, and making his profeſſion, alſo preferred the ſame claim; as there were more who had a right to do, but, diſcouraged by the ſuperiour merit of theſe two, they had declined their pretenſions for this time.

The brotherhood, having heard the competitors with attention, retired to the table, and kneeling around it, the ſuperiour repeated a prayer, in the ſame ſtrain and manner with the *profeſſion* of the candidates, *to the Being whom they ſerved*, to direct their choice to him of the two moſt worthy of his ſervice.

The ſuperiour then proceeded to take the ſuffrages of the reſt, with the ſame mimick ſolemnity; when my maſter being found to have the majority,

majority, his election was exultingly attributed to immediate inſpiration, and he was accordingly admitted within the rails, where he received *the name* and *character* which he was to bear in the ſociety, in a manner not proper to be deſcribed, every the moſt ſacred rite and ceremony of religion being profaned, all the prayers and hymns of praiſe appointed for the worſhip of the Deity burleſqued by a perverſion to the horrid occaſion.

In this manner the evening was waſted till ſupper-time, when they ſat down to a banquet in the chapel, in honour of the occaſion, at which nothing that the moſt refined luxury, the moſt laſcivious imagination could ſuggeſt to kindle looſe deſire, and provoke and gratify appetite, was wanting, both the ſuperiours and inferiours (who were permitted to take their places at the lower end of the table, as ſoon as they had ſerved in the banquet) vying with each other in looſe ſongs, and diſſertations of ſuch groſs lewdneſs and daring impiety, as deſpair may be ſuppoſed to dictate to the damned, in both which my maſter ſhone ſo unrivaled, as to bear down the ſuperiour ſprightlineſs, wit, and humour of all the reſt; and compenſate for the want of every companionable merit.

But while they were in the height of their feſtivity, an affair happened that interrupted it for a time, and ſhowed their reſolution, particularly that of my maſter, in a proper light.

The

The perſon who had that day been his competitor for the honour of admiſſion into the higher order of ſociety poſſeſſed the qualifications which he wanted in the moſt eminent degree. He had ſuch a flow of ſpirits, that it was impoſſible ever to be a moment dull in his company. His wit gave charms to every ſubject he ſpoke upon; and his humour diſplayed the foibles of mankind in ſuch colours, as to put folly even out of countenance.

But the ſame vanity which had firſt made him ambitious of entering into this ſociety, only becauſe it was compoſed of perſons of a rank ſuperiour to his own in life, and ſtill kept him in it, though upon acquaintance he deſpiſed them, ſullied all theſe advantages. His ſpirits were often ſtretched to extravagance, to overpower competition. His humour was debaſed into buffoonery; and his wit was ſo proſtituted to the luſt of applauſe, that he would ſacrifice his beſt friend for a ſcurvy jeſt; and wound the heart of him, whom he would at that very moment hazard his life and fortune to ſerve, only to raiſe a laugh; in which he was alſo aſſiſted by a peculiar archneſs of diſpoſition, and an unlucky expertneſs at carrying his *jeſts into practice*, as he proved upon this occaſion.

Though he diſdained to decline the late competition, as the others did, he had been well aware that my maſter's higher rank in life would carry the point in diſpute againſt him; for which

injuſtice he reſolved to revenge himſelf in the moſt ſignal manner.

For this purpoſe, he had contrived the night before to bring into his cell a great *Baboon*, which he had provided for the occaſion. When the brotherhood retired to their cells after dinner, as I have told you, to prepare for the ceremony, he availed himſelf of the office of keeper of the chapel, which he then filled, to convey this creature, dreſſed up in the fantaſtick garb in which childiſh imagination clothes devils, into the chapel, where he ſhut him up in a large cheſt, that ſtood there to hold the ornaments and utenſils of the table, when the ſociety was away. To the ſpring of the lock of this cheſt he faſtened a cord, which he drew under the carpet that was on the floor to his own ſeat, and there brought the end of it through a hole made for that purpoſe, in ſuch a manner, that he could readily find it; and, by giving it a pull, open the cheſt, and let the *Baboon* looſe whenever he pleaſed, without being perceived by any of the reſt of the company.

Accordingly, when they were all in the height of their mirth, on my maſter's kneeling down, and with hands and eyes raiſed towards heaven repeating an invocation, in the perverted phraſe of Holy Writ, to the Being whom they ſerved, to come among them, and receive their adorations in perſon, he pulled the cord, and let the animal looſe, who, glad to be delivered from his

his confinement, gave a ſudden ſpring upon the middle of the table.

The effect which the ſight of ſuch a viſitor had upon them may be better conceived than expreſſed. Their attention had been ſo fixed upon what my maſter was ſaying, that they perceived not from whence he came; and his appearing ſo critically at the invocation, and in ſuch a ſhape, made them conclude he was *the Being invoked.*

Terrified out of their ſenſes by this thought, they all roared out with one voice, *The Devil! the Devil!* and ſtarting from their ſeats, made directly towards the door, tumbling over one another, and over-ſetting every thing in their way.

In the height of this uproar and confuſion, *the Baboon*, frighted at the effects of their fear, happened to leap upon my maſter's ſhoulders, as he lay ſprawling on the floor, who, turning about his head at feeling the ſhock, ſaw the animal grinning horribly at him, and concluded the Devil had obeyed his ſummons in good earneſt, and come to carry him bodily away.

Driven as he was to deſpair by this thought, he ſtrove, however, in the inſtinctive impulſe of ſelf-preſervation, to ſhake off the invader; but he, inſtead of looſing his hold on his repeated efforts, only clung to him the cloſer, claſping his paws around his neck, and chattering with ſpite at his ear. This completed the caitiff's diſtreſs. Every ſhadow of ſpirit failed him,

and conſcious guilt ſuggeſting to him the meaning of this unintelligible jargon, he attempted, in the blindneſs of his fear, to move the very Devil to pity, by his pathetick wailings and ſupplications.

"Spare me, gracious Devil! (ſaid he) ſpare "a wretch, who never was ſincerely your ſer- "vant! I ſinned only from vanity of being in "the faſhion! thou knoweſt I never have been "half ſo wicked as I pretended; never have "been able to commit the thouſandth part of the "vices which I have boaſted of. Take not, "then, the advantage of that vanity; but judge "me only from my actions. I knew not that "thou wouldſt have come, or I ſhould never "have invoked thee! Leave me, therefore, and "go to thoſe who are more truely devoted to "thy ſervice. I am but half a ſinner. My "conſcience always flew in my face when I "committed any crime! My heart gave the "lie to my tongue, when I gloried in my vices; "and I trembled at the damnation I affected to "brave! O ſpare me, therefore, at leaſt for "this time, till I have ſerved thee better. I am "as yet but half a ſinner."

CHAP.

CHAP. XIX.

The DEVIL *is degraded to a* BABOON, *and his appearance well accounted for, which reſtores the mirth and courage of the company, and particularly of* CHRYSAL'*s maſter, who exerts himſelf to recover his character. The appearance of the be-deviled* BABOON *is traced next day to his introducer, who at the inſtance of* CHRYSAL'*s maſter is expelled the ſociety, for preſuming to ridicule their rites. Further conſequences of this affair make the ſuperiour break up his monaſtery, and build a church.*

WHILE my maſter was making this eſſay of his eloquence upon the *Baboon*, the perſon who had brought him there took the opportunity of the conſternation the whole company was in, to open one of the windows unperceived by them, for the animal to make his eſcape, which he no ſooner ſaw, than he made directly to it, giving my maſter a happy releaſe.

Before he could get clear off, though, one of the company, who was bolder than the reſt, having muſtered reſolution to raiſe his head, got a full view of him, and perceiving what he was, juſt as my maſter concluded his ſupplications, "Your prayers are heard!" (ſaid he, ſtarting up, and ſpeaking, as ſoon as a burſt of laughter gave him utterance) "your prayers

" are heard for this time; and that Devil of a " great *He-baboon*, that's juſt gone out of the " window, deſpiſing *half a ſinner*, has ſpared " you, till you are fitter for his ſervice."

At hearing theſe words, they all aroſe from the floor, where they had lain ſprawling on top of one another, and looking in amazement at him who had ſpoke them, " Courage, my " friends! (ſaid he) this is but a falſe alarm! " our *maſter* is not ſo ready to come for us " when we call him, or we ſhould none of us all " be here now. How *a Baboon*, though, ſhould " come here, to ſcare us all out of our little wits " in ſuch a manner, the Devil may tell you, if " he will, for I cannot; but I ſwear I ſaw one " go out of that window."——

" And I'll ſwear, too, that I ſaw him come in at it;" (replied the author of the miſchief, who ſaw no way to eſcape detection, but by preventing further enquiry by this bold lie) " as I juſt then happened to look about, to ſee " from whence the wind came that blew upon " my poll."——

This eclairciſſement ſatisfied them all; they inſtantly ſet the room to rights, and plaſtering up their broken ſhins and noſes, ſat down to conclude their carouſal, reſuming their former ſtrain, in which they all exerted themſelves in an uncommon manner, to wipe off the diſgrace of their late *ſqueaking*, particularly my maſter, who *out-did his uſual out-doing*, in profaneneſs, blaſphemy,

blaſphemy, and wickedneſs of every kind, to recover his character, and convince them he was more than *half a ſinner*.

They held in this hand, till nature ſunk under the fatigue, when they retired, to ſleep off their debauch in their *cells*, where, as I ſaid, proper proviſion had been made for them, to reduce the theory of the day into practice, in the intervals of reſt.

Though the affair of the *Baboon* had paſſed off ſo cleverly while their ſpirits were in ſuch a flurry, when they came to enquire more coolly into it next day, the whole trick came out. It had been impoſſible to convey him into the monaſtery, without the privity of ſome of the ſervants, who had all ſo often *felt the jeſts* of this gentleman, that they were glad of an opportunity of being revenged upon him now, by making the diſcovery.

This account, confirmed by ſome circumſtances in his behaviour, which they had not attended to at the time, plainly pointing out the guilty perſon, the ſuperiours adjourned directly to the chapel, to conſult how they ſhould proceed on ſo delicate an occaſion. For, though they had always highly approved of ſuch *wit*, when *practiſed* upon others, they looked upon the application of it to themſelves in the moſt heinous light, eſpecially in ſuch an inſtance as this, the conſequences of which had expoſed them to the contempt of each other, by detect-

ing their *weakneſs*, and ſhowing that the guilt in which they gloried was only feigned.

Mortifying as this was to their vanity, the thought, however, that the caſe was general, afforded them ſome conſolation. However, to remedy the effect of this, and prevent a repetition of the like diſgrace, it was propoſed, after mature deliberation, and much learned argument on the queſtion, to bury what was paſt, by a ſolemn act of amneſty, and make a ſpecial law, whoſe obſervation ſhould be enforced *by an oath*, that no member ſhould ever after preſume to attempt exerciſing his wit upon the ſociety, in any manner, or by any means whatſoever; on taking which oath, and aſking pardon upon his knees, at the door of the chapel, the offender ſhould be forgiven.

To this propoſal, they all aſſented except my maſter, who for private reaſons thought the latter part of it much too mild for ſo flagrant a crime. He had long cheriſhed a ſecret grudge againſt the other, who not only often pointed his wit againſt him, in a manner that he could not digeſt, nor knew how to reſent, it being as polite as it was keen, but alſo put him conſtantly to the expenſe of double wickedneſs, the only qualification in which he could poſſibly ſhine, to avoid being totally eclipſed by him: his deſire of revenge alſo was ſtrongeſt on this occaſion, as he had ſuffered the deepeſt diſgrace.

Accordingly,

Accordingly, he exerted all his eloquence, to ſhow *the enormity of the crime of attempting to turn any of the rites and ceremonies eſtabliſhed by the laws of the ſociety into ridicule*; the letting of which eſcape without adequate puniſhment, he ſaid, would argue weakneſs, and want of ſpirit in them, and muſt end in the ruin of their authority; for which weighty reaſons he propoſed that the offender ſhould be directly expelled the ſociety in form, as the only effectual way to vindicate their dignity, and prevent others from offering it the like inſult for the future.

This gave the affair a new turn. They all took fire at the thought of their dignities being inſulted, and expelled him that moment, without even waiting to hear him in his own defenſe. But he ſoon had the ſatisfaction of ſeeing himſelf amply avenged.

The care they took to keep every thing they did ſecret had long awoke the curioſity of the neighbourhood, who were the more ſevere in their gueſſes, the leſs able they were to gueſs right. But the affair of the *Baboon*, whom the ſervants got ſight of, before he could be caught, and whether miſled by his dreſs, or miſrepreſenting by deſign, gave out to be *the Devil*, was no ſooner known, than a formal ſtory was propagated over the whole country, that the end of their meeting was to worſhip the Devil, to whom this chapel was dedicated, and who had *often* been ſeen among them, in variety of ſhapes.

Scandal always meets eaſy credit. The ſtory was believed by many, and repeated by more, as if they believed it, never loſing any thing in the repetition; till ſuch an univerſal alarm was raiſed among the people (who are content to infringe the precepts of Religion, without denying its authority) that the ſuperiour, whoſe ſeat was in the neighbourhood, found it neceſſary to diſſolve the ſociety, and effacing every trace of it, convert the building to the better uſe of a pleaſure houſe, in which he entertained all his neighbours in general, whenever he was in the country: Beſide which, he alſo built a church, on an eminence near his houſe, that anſwered the double purpoſe of convincing the populace of his regard to Religion, and of making a beautiful termination to a viſta which he had juſt cut through a wood in his park.

I have anticipated theſe circumſtances, to ſatisfy your curioſity; as I have alſo omitted many, and ſoftened more particulars in this account, which were too horrid to have been repreſented in their proper colours.

CHAP.

CHAP. XX.

A further account of the rules of the convent; with ſome ſtriking inſtances of œconomy. A ſeeming inconſiſtency accounted for from a principle not ſufficiently underſtood. Some remarkable effects of vanity. Reaſon of the abuſe of wealth.

YOU are aſtoniſhed how ſuch ſcenes of debauchery and exceſs could be ſupported, either by the fortune of the entertainer, or the conſtitutions of his gueſts; but this ſhall be explained.

To prevent ſatiety or fatigue, theſe meetings were never protracted beyond a week at a time; nor held oftener than twice in a year; by which frugality of pleaſure, they were always returned to with the keenneſs of novelty: And as for the expenſe of them, that was defrayed jointly by the whole community (the ſuperiour contributing nothing more than any other member, except the firſt coſt of building the *convent*, which he thought himſelf amply recompenſed for, by the honour of having ſtruck out the plan;) and regulated by the ſtricteſt œconomy; the ſlaves of their luſts being ſent back to the brothels from whence they had been brought; and the ſervants of their luxury diſcharged, at the end of every meeting; and no more retained for the

reſt of the year, than an old man and woman, who took care of the place.

To you, who have ſupported the dignity of your nature, by preferring the pleaſures of that reaſon, which was given to diſtinguiſh man from brutes, to thoſe of ſenſe, which they enjoy in common with him, the picture of this whole ſcene muſt appear *over-charged*, and irreconcileable with the great principles of human action, which always propoſe ſome *good*, either preſent or future, however the judgement may err in the thing propoſed. But more acquaintance with life would ſolve this difficulty to you.

The general motive for attempting to turn Religion into ridicule has been already explained. But as ſome are ſeen to give into this practice, who ſeem to cultivate their reaſon with moſt ſucceſs; and whoſe actions, and even inclinations, appear not to have the remoteſt tendency contrary to moral virtue, it may be proper to account for ſuch an exception.

The firſt principle of action, impreſſed by nature on every thing that lives, is *ſelf-preſervation*. From this, *brute* animals, which *by neceſſity* proceed regularly in the courſe preſcribed for them, never ſwerve: but the *rational* animal, man, bewildered in his own imaginations, by the abuſe of that *liberty* which was given him to enhance the merit of his obedience to the dictates of *reaſon*, often ſubſtitutes another in its place, by whoſe impulſe he acts in direct oppoſition to it.

This

This is *vanity!* the real ſource of that ambition which courts danger, and plunges with open eyes into deſtruction, however ſpeciouſly it may be diſguiſed under the pompous titles of love of glory, and regard to the publick good; as well as of moſt of the extravagancies and abſurdities which puzzle ſuperficial obſervers, and make them preſumptuouſly impeach, as a defect in the work of nature, their own neglect, and perverſion of its laws.

A particular enquiry into the effects of this *ſuppoſitious* principle, many of which, as I ſaid, are blazoned as the brighteſt virtues, while more are acknowledged to be the moſt atrocious crimes; or how nearly ſuch virtues and crimes, proceeding thus from the ſame ſource, may be allied, though curious and intereſting in itſelf, is not neceſſary here. It is ſufficient to obſerve, that its power is able to break the force of habit, reconcile contradictions, and confound the eſſential differences of things; to cope with *prejudice*, and over-rule the *infirmities* of nature.

This it is, for inſtance, that makes the *conſtitutional* coward, who trembles at the thought of danger, and would ſee his country ruined rather than draw his ſword in its defenſe, *fight duels* for a doubtful punctilio of empty ceremony; the *ſuperſtitious* wretch, who finds *omens* in *ſpilled ſalt* and *croſſed ſtraws*, and *ſees Goblins* and *Devils* in the dark, profeſs infidelity, ridicule Providence, and dare the wrath of Heaven, by

inſults

inſults and bravadoes; and laſtly, this it is, that makes the hoary Sage, whoſe life has been regulated by the ſtricteſt principles of morality and religion, while paſſion might have rebelled againſt them, commence Libertine in the impotence of old age, and glory in vices he has loſt the power to practiſe. Of the juſtice of theſe remarks, the members of this ſociety, of which vanity was the cement, as it had been the origin, afforded the moſt glaring proofs.

You wonder what there could be to be vain of in ſuch an aſſociation! but you do not reflect, that vanity is never the reſult of real worth. The falſe glare of publick eſtimation reflects it from the vileſt and moſt reproachful objects.

The inſtitutor of this ſociety was *admired* for every polite accompliſhment, every power of pleaſing in converſation; and the firſt ſet he choſe were all of the ſame caſt. This, with their rank and fortunes, and, above all, the myſtery of the inſtitution, which ſet curioſity on fire, and gave imagination room to form the moſt flattering ideas of it, made admiſſion into it an object of univerſal ambition, as it ſeemed a proof of every member's meriting the ſame character; and when once admitted, a vicious fear of ridicule made too many aſhamed to quit it; and even they who did were precluded from diſcovering any thing that might deter others, by the ſecrecy to which they were ſworn.

There is one thing more, which from the particular circumſtances of your own life, affects you more than any other in this account. This is the folly and ingratitude of laviſhing the bleſſing of wealth to the diſhonour of the donor; and with ſo little regard to its real uſe. But this, as has been the caſe in other inſtances, proceeds from want of better acquaintance with life.

It has been remarked by travellers, that in thoſe parts of the earth, where the bleſſings of nature are beſtowed with the greateſt liberality, the people ſeem leaſt ſenſible of them, and are ſunk in the groſſeſt vice; as if reaſon and virtue were incompatible with the good things of this world.

The reaſon of this remark holds with reſpect to wealth in other countries. Provided to profuſion with every thing they want, the rich look no farther than to the gratification of their appetites and paſſions; as the means to procure which are in their poſſeſſion, they acknowledge no obligation to the power which firſt gave, and ſtill preſerves the enjoyment of them; but, on the contrary, affect to ſhow their independence, by proſtituting it to purpoſes directly contrary to his declared pleaſure; and this cauſes that abuſe of wealth, which generally marrs the bleſſing, and makes the gift of it ſo dangerous.

CHAP.

CHAP. XXI.

Account of the members of the ſociety. The hiſtory of the ſuperiour. The particular qualifications by which he aroſe in life. Succeſs in a private inſtance encourages him to try his talents in an higher ſphere, from which he ſoon deſcends with diſgrace. A ſtriking inconſiſtency in his character.

I See you deſire to have ſome account of the ſeveral members of ſo extraordinary a ſociety. When the great lines which diſtinguiſh the characters of mankind are marked by virtues, or even by ſuperiour abilities, that dazzle ſuperficial obſervation by the ſplendour of their effects, and paſs for ſuch, however different in the tendency of their exertions, the delineation affords pleaſure; but, on the contrary, where thoſe lines are all diſtorted by vice and folly, and diſtinguiſhed from each other only by different modes and degrees of them, the contemplation is a pain; and to paint them a taſk ſo diſagreeable, that nothing but an impartial regard to truth could make it be undertaken. However, your curioſity ſhall be gratified.

As the *convent* was dedicated to pleaſure, you may imagine that play made a part of their entertainment. Contrary, indeed, to the ſcheme of all other parties of pleaſure, it was not the firſt object of their meeting; and only ſerved to fill

fill up the intervals between other pleaſures, which nature, without ſome reſpite, could not ſupport in ſuch exceſs. The circulation, however, even in this *piddling* for mere amuſement, gave me an opportunity of taking a view of all their characters; ſuch of which as contained any thing worthy of your notice, for you muſt not expect it from them all, I will give you ſome general ſketches of.

As the looks of a man are generally a comment on his heart, I will place the whole company in your view, as I have done on other occaſions, to aſſiſt you in forming a proper notion of their characters. At the head of the table ſits the ſuperiour. You ſee every eye is expreſſively fixed upon him, in admiration at the vivacity, humour, and wit in all he ſays, while, by an art peculiarly happy, he alone ſeems unconſcious of his own pre-eminence.

Theſe talents, which, from the intoxication of preſent applauſe, are much oftener of prejudice than advantage to the poſſeſſor, by diverting from more ſolid purſuits, proved the foundation of his exalted rank and fortune; becauſe always directed by the deepeſt and moſt delicate addreſs.

The firſt inſtance in which this addreſs was diſplayed, was in his own family. He had a diſtant relation, who had ſpent his youth in ſuch buſy ſcenes, as left not time for his imagination to wander in ſearch of amuſement. To a mind

mind unaccuſtomed to be wound up to ſuch a pitch, the charms of a converſation like his were a relaxation irreſiſtibly engaging. He inſinuated himſelf inſenſibly into his favour, and by ſeeming to have nothing in view but his pleaſure, led him as he pleaſed himſelf, not only into all the lengths of his own libertiniſm, ſo as to be a member of this ſociety, when the decline of life, at leaſt, ſhould have ſuggeſted more ſerious thoughts; but alſo at his death to reward his complaiſance with a much larger portion of his fortune than he had any claim to, from conſanguinity, or the preference of reaſon.

Such ſucceſs encouraged his ambition to higher attempts. Introduced by the ſame qualifications to the acquaintance of *the great*, he not only gained their favour by them, but alſo impoſed them upon them for abilities of an higher claſs ſo far, that being ſecure of his ſubſerviency to their deſigns, they admitted him to a ſhare of their power.

But in this he had deceived himſelf, as well as them; as he found to their diſappointment, and his own extreme confuſion, upon the very firſt tryal of his political talents, when he ſhowed in the ſtrongeſt light the difference between the abilities requiſite to raiſe a laugh, and rule a nation.

He had ſenſe enough, however, to ſee his miſtake, before it had involved him in any conſequences from which he could not recede without

without danger as well as diſgrace; and prudently ſacrificing his ambition to his ſafety, he turned off all with a laugh, and returned to the enjoyment of thoſe pleaſures, for which nature ſeemed to have ſo particularly deſigned him. Whether that enjoyment is as ſincere and undiſturbed, though, as ſhould appear from his looks and conduct, is a point not ſo certain as you may be apt to imagine.

The principles on which this ſociety was originally inſtituted, and from which it has never deviated, *the profeſſed ridicule of moral Virtue and Religion*, ſhould ſeem to have proceeded from an utter diſbelief of a Deity; or, at leaſt, a fearleſs defiance of his power; but, contrary to this, there ſtarts not at his own ſhadow a more abject ſlave to ſuperſtition, and all its fooliſh fears, than he was at the time of his inſtituting it, and ſtill remains.

Such an inconſiſtency requires explanation to you, whoſe notions of life are formed ſolely from rational ſpeculation.

CHAP. XXII.

Continuation of the Hiſtory of the ſuperiour. The inconſiſtency in his character accounted for. The reaſon of his being ſent early to travel for education. Political principles all neceſſary to be attended to in a tutor. The method and effect of his tutor's care to inſtruct him in religion. A frightful ſtory gives riſe to a frightful dream, which is interrupted ſtill more frightfully. A tremendous apparition terrifies him into a ſwoon. Account of the apparition.

THE political principles of his family being in avowed oppoſition to their Sovereign, the earlieſt care was taken to inſtil the ſame into him; and the ripeneſs of his parts and genius flattered them with a promiſe of his future conſequence in the ſtate.

For this purpoſe, before reaſon ſhould have time to be convinced by experience of the injuſtice and danger of ſuch deſigns, he was ſent abroad, to be educated in a country where every object ſhould concur to prejudice him againſt the laws and conſtitution of his own, and the opportunity of perſonal intercourſe confirm his attachment to him whoſe intereſt he was intended to promote.

The publick conduct of his life has ſufficiently ſhown the ſucceſs of this ſcheme; as an incidental

dental circumſtance in the execution of it will alſo account for the inconſiſtencies in his private character.

The religious principles eſtabliſhed in the country whither he was thus ſent for education, and the political ones it was deſigned he ſhould aſſiſt to eſtabliſh at home, were ſo intimately and eſſentially connected, that it was impoſſible to find a tutor for him ſufficiently attached to the latter to anſwer the purpoſe of his family, who was not alſo at leaſt ſecretly inclined to, even if he did not openly profeſs, the former.

But this made no difficulty. Religion is, in reality, the thing leaſt thought of, however pompouſly it may be profeſſed in political ſchemes. They ſcrupled not, therefore, to commit his tender mind to the influence of ſuch an one, regardleſs what impreſſions he might make upon it, beſide thoſe they deſired—an opportunity which he did not fail to take advantage of.

Accordingly, as ſoon as the tutor and his pupil were ſettled in the place of their deſignation, the former began his deſign, by diſplaying on every occaſion the excellence and importance of the ceremonies and rites of the religion profeſſed there, as the objects moſt likely to ſtrike the levity of youth, always complaining with a contemptuous concern of the want of ſuch in that of his own country; not chooſing to ſpeak more directly at firſt, for fear of giving him any alarm.

But,

But, artful as this method was, he had the diſappointment to ſee it did not ſucceed ſo well as he could wiſh. Though, from the manner of his pupil's earlieſt education, it was eaſy enough to ſink his own religion in his opinion, yet ſome circumſtances rendered the raiſing of any other in its place a matter of more difficulty than might have been obviouſly apprehended. His natural quickneſs and turn for ridicule made him ſee every thing in the moſt diſadvantageous light at the firſt glance, at the ſame time that his diſſipation and levity prevented his attending to the abſtruſer arguments, often neceſſary to eſtabliſh the credit of matters of ſuch importance beyond the reach of rational doubt; ſo that all the pains his tutor was piouſly taking to enlarge his faith, threatened to work the contrary effect, of making him an infidel.

Alarmed at this, the tutor, whoſe bigotted credulity had ſwallowed every fiction of ſuperſtition, had always ſome miraculous ſtory of a *judgement* or *apparition* ready to refute the ſcoffs of his pupil, and confirm the truth of whatever he himſelf advanced. The conſtant repetition of ſuch tales, which he plainly ſhowed his own belief of, inſenſibly made ſuch an impreſſion on his pupil's imagination, as perſuaded him of their poſſibility at leaſt, if he was not abſolutely convinced of the truth of every thing in proof of which they were alledged; and filled him with

fears,

fears, for which a good foundation had before been laid in the nurſery.

When his mind was thus prepared to catch at every terrour, his tutor took him one day to ſee the exhibition of one of thoſe miracles, which are ſaid to be wrought at the ſhrine of a conteſted ſaint; and which really weaken the credit of the religion they were deviſed to ſupport.

The abſurdity was too ſtriking to eſcape his obſervation. He turned it into the moſt poignant ridicule, in ſpite of all his tutor's pains to defend it; who, finding that his arguments had no effect, had recourſe to his uſual proof of an *apparition*, which he dreſſed up in every colour and circumſtance of horrour, to make it have the greater weight.

His pupil took not more than uſual notice of the matter, while light and company diverted his thoughts; but when he went to bed, and found himſelf alone, and in the dark, the whole flaſhed upon him in all its terrours, heightened in every inſtance by the livelineſs of his own imagination.

What he felt in ſuch a ſituation may eaſier be conceived than expreſſed. He covered up his head with the clothes; and lay ſweating and trembling, till his mind was wearied with dwelling on the ſame thoughts, and he ſunk into a kind of ſlumber.

But this was far from giving him relief. He was no ſooner aſleep, than imagination, now in her

her own empire, placed him in the midſt of the ſcene which had juſt before been ſo elaborately deſcribed to him by his tutor, from the contemplation of which he was delivered only̆ to ſuffer ſtill more ſeverely; being awakened by ſounds uncouth enough to ſtartle, at ſuch a time, the moſt reſolute mind unacquainted with them.

Such a continuation realized all the horrours of his dream. He ſtarted up; and turning in the inſtinctive curioſity of affright to that part of the room from whence the ſounds ſtill continued to come, ſaw four glaring eye-balls fixed upon him, at the ſame time that a voice diſtinctly articulated, but in a tremendous tone, and language which he did not underſtand, thundered directly in his ear.

The darkneſs, which prevented his ſeeing the bodies to which thoſe eyes belonged, and his ignorance of the imports of the ſounds, only added to his fright, by giving room to imagination, not only to form the moſt horrible conceptions of them, but alſo to apprehend them ſtill more horrible than he could conceive. He was not able to ſupport ſuch an attack; but, giving one helpleſs ſhriek, ſunk back in a ſwóon.

His tutor, who lay in the next room, and had been awakened by the ſame ſounds, but was not ſo much terrified at them, both becauſe his mind was not ſo well prepared for terrours, and that he was acquainted with their cauſe, heard him

him ſhriek, and, knowing his voice, ran to him, imagining he was engaged in a conflict, in which he might want aſſiſtance, with the *cats* which he heard in his room; for, from two of thoſe animals, which, finding the window open, had choſen it for the ſcene of their amours, had thoſe dreadful ſounds proceeded.

CHAP. XXIII.

Continuation. Behaviour of the tutor on finding his pupil in a ſwoon. He recovers; and terrifies his tutor, by miſtaking him for a ſaint. Charity begins at home. The tutor ſagaciouſly gueſſes at the meaning of the miſtake; and piouſly reſolves to improve it. The pupil's full and true account of the apparition, with the tutor's honeſt addition to it. His repentance and converſion. His tutor moderates his zeal, for weighty reaſons. He relapſes; and his tutor, for private reaſons, divulges the whole affair. The method he took to invalidate the ſtory.

YOU may judge how he was affected at ſeeing the perſon, upon whom all his hopes of wealth and preferment were founded, in ſuch a ſituation. Aukward at the beſt, he now knew not how to attempt giving him any aſſiſtance, nor had even the preſence of mind to call any one who could, ſo great was his embarraſſment and confuſion. Nature, however, ſoon delivered him from his diſtreſs, and reſtored his hopes, by the recovery of his pupil.

As ſoon as he came a little to himſelf, he ſtared wildly round him for ſome moments, and then fixing his eyes upon his tutor, who ſtill ſtood gaping in amazement at him, he miſtook him, from his being in his ſhirt, for the ſaint that

that ran in his head, his imagination ſtill continuing the former ſcene, and holding up his hands in a ſuppliant poſture, as he lay trembling on his back, "O mercy, gracious Saint! "(ſaid he.) Have mercy on my youth! never "will I again preſume to ridicule any of the ſa- "cred rites of religion! never will I admit a "doubt of any thing it commands me to be- "lieve! O mercy! mercy!"—Saying which words he fainted away again.

This addreſs, one word of which the tutor did not underſtand, threw him into a fright almoſt as great as that of his pupil. He ſtood, for ſome time, ſtupified by aſtoniſhment, till the cold reminding him that he was in his ſhirt, care for his own health conquered every other concern, and made him go to put on his clothes, before he attempted to do any thing for the other.

While he was dreſſing himſelf, he conſidered what his pupil had ſaid with rather more attention than his fear had permitted him before, and recollecting the ſubject of their converſation the preceding evening, concluded that Heaven had made uſe of ſome ſupernatural means to ſubdue his infidelity, the impreſſion of which remaining ſtill upon his mind, had occaſioned his miſtaking him, in the manner he did, for a Saint (for that he ſhould be terrified to that degree by the ſcreaming of the cats never came into his head;) and piouſly reſolved to contribute his aſ-

ſiſtance to the deception, by taking no notice that he had been with him before, or even denying it, if he ſaw occaſion.

With this intention he returned to his pupil, determined, though, not to diſcloſe his ſuſpicion, till the other ſhould make ſome diſcovery to direct him more certainly how to proceed.

His pupil, who was juſt come to himſelf, knew him directly, now he was dreſſed, and catching his hand eagerly, as ſoon as he came within his reach, "O my deareſt, my beſt friend! (ſaid "he, preſſing it to his lips) what have I ſuf-"fered ſince I ſaw you? How dearly have I "paid for the profaneneſs and infidelity of which "you have ſo often reproved me, with pious "and paternal care. But never will I be guilty "of the like again. I reſign myſelf implicitly "to your direction, and will, from this hour, "believe every thing you require me."——

His tutor, after giving him ſome ſpiritual comfort, and encouraging his perſeverance in this pious reſolution, deſired to know what had been the happy occaſion of it, to which the other anſwered, that *ſome little time after he went to bed, the room was ſuddenly enlightened, in a manner not to be deſcribed, when the apparition, of which he had given him an account the evening before, ſtood before him, wrapped in blue flames, and breathing ſmoke and ſulphur; and calling to him in a voice that appalled his ſoul, denounced Heaven's vengeange againſt his infidelity, which he was juſt going*

to

to put in execution, when the holy Saint, whoſe miracles he had ſo impiouſly turned into ridicule, appeared all robed in white, and circled round with glory; and interpoſing between him and the ſpectre, the latter gave a ſhriek that ſhook the room, and then vaniſhed in a flame of fire; upon which the Saint turned to him, with a look ineffably benign, and exhorting him to repentance, gave him his benediction, and diſappeared.

Ready as his tutor was to believe every thing that exceeded belief, when alledged in the cauſe of religion, the circumſtance of his own having been miſtaken for a Saint ſtaggered his faith in all the reſt, and made him for once juſtly conclude, that the whole miracle was no more than a fiction of that fear with which the ſcreaming of the cats ſtruck him in his ſleep, for he now plainly traced the effects of their voices.

However, far from undeceiving him, he improved upon the thought; and, as ſoon as his pupil concluded his tale, with a grave face and ſolemn air added a ſequel to it, of equal truth, but dictated by a very different degree of veracity; the former being deceived himſelf, and having eked out the illuſions of his fear, as diſtracted imagination ſuggeſted to him; whereas the latter aggravated thoſe illuſions, by untruths premeditately deviſed to confirm that deception.

He ſaid, *that, grieved at the danger with which an unhappy prejudice of education threatened the ſpiritual ſafety of one ſo dear to him, inſtead of lying down to reſt, he had fallen upon his knees, and poured out his ſoul in prayer and ſupplication to Heaven, to enlighten his (pupil's) mind, and convince him of his errours, in which holy exerciſe he had continued ever ſince, till this moment, when, in the impulſe of a perſuaſion, which he now perceived to have been divinely inſpired, that his prayers were heard, he came to ſatisfy himſelf of the reality of ſo miraculous an event, for which he begged him to join in returning immediate thanks to Heaven, and the bleſſed Saint who had wrought it.*

This completed the deception of his pupil, ſo far as to make him believe the truth of ſome parts of his own tale, which he was not altogether ſo certain of before. He aroſe, therefore, and reconciling himſelf to the faith of his tutor, by the ſtrongeſt and moſt full profeſſions, dedicated the remainder of the night with him to prayer and pious converſation.

In the firſt heat of his devotion, he was for making the whole affair publick, and openly joining himſelf to that religion, whoſe truth was thus confirmed to him. But his tutor moderated the fervency of his zeal, ſenſible that ſuch a ſtep would not only defeat the political deſigns of his friends, which muſt be carried on under a maſque, and in whoſe ſucceſs his own wiſhes were moſt warmly

warmly intereſted; but alſo overturn his own hopes of being well rewarded for the care of his education, by a church-living of great revenue, that was in the gift of one of his pupil's relations, who had promiſed it to him, as ſoon as the incumbent, then ſinking under all the infirmities of extreme old age, ſhould die: for his religious principles never interfered with his intereſt.

For theſe moſt weighty reaſons, though, as you may imagine, he communicated only the former, he prevailed upon his convert to be content with the private practice, without the profeſſion of his new faith, till he ſhould, in the fullneſs of time, be ſo happy as to contribute his aſſiſtance to the great event, which ſhould eſtabliſh it in his own country.

Such an argument could not fail of effect upon one who found the fervour of his devotion cool ſo faſt, that in a few days the whole matter was entirely reverſed, and his practice as libertine as ever, though fear of ſeeing any more ſpectres reſtrained his profeſſions within more decent bounds. For, ſo deeply was the dread of them imprinted on his mind, that to this day he dares not to ſleep by himſelf, or be a moment alone in the dark: though his tutor, ſoon after his return home, divulged the whole affair, as far as it affected not himſelf, with the addition of many circumſtances, if poſſible, ſtill more contemptibly ridiculous than the true, to revenge his

his procuring the living for one of his raking companions, and ingratiate himſelf with a particular enemy of his, from whom he expected a recompence for ſo pleaſing a piece of ſcandal; to invalidate which was one of his pupil's motives for inſtituting this ſociety.

CHAP.

CHAP. XXIV.

Account of the members continued. Hiſtory of one who turned libertine in ſpeculation, after he had loſt the power of being ſo in practice. How this happened; the force of literary vanity; and the reaſon why it is ſtronger than any other. Inſtances of the advantages reaped from encouraging genius. A new method of flattery is ſucceſsful where all others had failed, and by a maſterſtroke makes vanity gain a ſignal triumph over virtue.

AT the right hand of the ſuperiour you ſee one, whoſe example ſhould be a warning to mankind never to be off their guard againſt the allurements of vice, while there is any poſſibility, however remote and improbable, of their falling into it.

While youth might have been pleaded in excuſe of paſſion; and the buſy application of manhood extenuated any ſpeculative errours in opinion, his conduct had been regulated by the ſtricteſt regard to the principles of moral virtue, and the precepts of religion. But in the evening of his days, when all that heat and hurry gave place to cool reflexion, and the ſerenity of the proſpect more than compenſates for its approaching cloſe, the whole ſcene was wretchedly reverſed, and his ſetting ſun over-caſt with a cloud of vices moſt

moſt blameable in any ſtage of life, but aggravated ten thouſand-fold in his, to which they were unnatural.

I have told you before, that vanity was the cauſe of a fall, ſo reproachful to humanity: The manner, though, of its operating upon one who ſeemed to be removed ſo far beyond its reach is worthy of attention.

In no inſtance is the power of vanity ſo tyrannically exerted over the human heart, as when it ariſes from an opinion of literary merit. The reaſon is obvious. Real learning is the moſt effectual check to vanity, as it ſhows the inſtability of its foundation. When, therefore, any thing that makes pretence, however falſely, to that name, ſeems to adminiſter to its ſupport, it inſtantly looks upon itſelf as above controul.

Though early engagement in the active ſcenes of his country's ſervice had prevented his making any great proficiency in the more abſtruſe purſuits of ſpeculation, his natural inclination to them, directed by a taſte formed by the beſt education, made him embrace all opportunities of patronizing every advance in ſcience, and improvement in the finer arts.

The liberality with which he indulged this inclination ſoon marked him out to the attacks of every needy adventurer in the trade of letters. Projectors conſulted him on their ſchemes. Poets ſubmitted their works to his correction. His virtues, among which munificence was never forgot,

forgot, were the inexhauſted theme of panegyrick; and dedications declared to the world his abilities and knowledge.

Adulation ſo groſs was an affront to reaſon. He rejected, with juſt contempt, the praiſes to which he knew himſelf not entitled; and was ſuperiour to the flattery, which compaſſion for the flatterer often made him ſeem to pay for. Happy had he always preſerved the ſame delicacy!

Among the crouds of paraſites, who lay in wait thus for his favour, was a perſon, whom idleneſs ſeduced to prefer this abject ſtate of dependence to the purſuit of a liberal profeſſion, which he had been bred to—A baſeneſs aggravated by his poſſeſſing every qualification neceſſary to have made him eminent in any ſtate.

This man, who had thoroughly ſtudied the human heart, ſoon ſaw that any direct attack upon his patron would prove ineffectual. He, therefore, ſtruck out a new ſcheme, the depth of which ſecured it from detection, though, at the ſame time, the difficulty of carrying it into execution would have diſcouraged any one, leſs anxious for ſucceſs, and confident of his own abilities. He diſguiſed the ſtrongeſt flattery under the maſque of the moſt cynical bluntneſs and candour; and inſtead of praiſing all he did, and echoing in aſſent every word he ſpoke, he miſſed no occaſion of differing in opinion with him, declaring he thought that being, who could

could debaſe the dignity of his nature ſo far as to give up his judgement to another, from any other motive than rational conviction, unworthy of the name of man.

A behaviour ſo ſingular neceſſarily attracted the notice of his patron, as the manner in which it was carried on ſoon won his favour. For in all the debates of any moment, which this champion for liberty of thought held with him, he managed with ſuch delicate art, as to lead him (his patron) to confute him, though frequently contrary to the opinion with which he had originally ſet out. In trifles indeed, where being foiled could reflect no diſgrace, he proceeded not with that caution, but often gained a victory, for which he laughed at himſelf when it was won.

But with others he obſerved not ſuch moderation. Be the ſubject what it would, he exerted all his powers (and great as I have ſaid they were) till he ſilenced, at leaſt, if he could not convince his adverſary, over whom he then triumphed in all the inſolence of ſuperiority.

Such a method could not fail of ſucceſs! His patron, ſure of coming off with honour, ſought every opportunity of entering into debate with him, and contracted an eſteem for one who, as he thought, had thus diſcovered to him his own abilities, while every one elſe declined entering into a conteſt, which always involved them in diſgrace.

Encouraged

Encouraged by this ſucceſs, he boldly ventured upon a ſtroke, the event of which was to decide his hopes. In gratification to his own depraved taſte, he had written a treatiſe, in which the groſſeſt libertiniſm was ſet in ſo advantageous and alluring a light, and the arguments againſt it evaded with ſo much plauſibility and true wit, as were almoſt ſufficient to put virtue out of countenance, and debauch its ſincereſt votaries.

The contradiction between ſuch principles and the practice of his patron, through his whole life, would have deterred any one leſs enterpriſing, and experienced in the weakneſſes of human nature, from diſcloſing them; but he had lately made ſome diſcoveries, which emboldened him even to puſh his deſigns much farther, than owning himſelf the author of that book.

While the vigour of life had enabled his patron to perſiſt in buſier purſuits, he had deſpiſed the flattery paid to his literary merits; but as ſoon as the infirmities of age rendered him unfit for ſuch employment, he with a natural partiality gave the preference to that pre eminence which he thought ſtill within his reach, and affected to ſlight all fame, that was not founded on the nobler labours of the mind.

This was a ſufficient direction to the paraſite. He immediately ſhowed his book, with a myſterious air, to ſeveral of his patron's friends, giving them broad hints at the ſame time, but under the ſeal of ſecrecy, that he was the author of it.

it. There is no way ſo effectual as this to ſpread any ſtory. One whiſpered it to another, till, in a few days, the whole town was in the ſecret.

The hints and alluſions which were every hour thrown out to the patron, on this occaſion, perplexed him not a little, as he knew not what they meant. A ſecret, though in the poſſeſſion of ſo many, could not poſſibly remain long ſuch to him. One of his acquaintances, provoked at the ſeeming affectation of his not underſtanding his hints, told him the whole affair.

Much as he was ſurpriſed at the account, vanity would not let him ſuppreſs it by a direct negative, as the book was mentioned in terms of the higheſt praiſe. He anſwered with the coy evaſions of modeſty, the moſt effectual affirmation, and ſhifted off any further diſcuſſion of the ſubject, till he ſhould be better informed.

Accordingly, the moment his friend left him, he ſent for the author of the report, and charging him with it, deſired to ſee the performance which he had done him the honour to father upon him.

The paraſite, who took his cue from the looks of his patron, was far from denying the charge. He preſented him the book without heſitation, ſaying, with his uſual bluntneſs, that if it was not actually written by him, it was literally written from him, being nothing but what he had frequently ſaid on thoſe ſubjects;

and